A COLLECTION OF OLD ENGLISH PLAYS, VOL. II

In Four Volumes

Edited by
A.H. BULLEN

1882-89.

CONTENTS:

Preface
Dick of Devonshire
The Lady Mother
The plays in this volume are printed for the first time. All are anonymous; but it is absolutely certain that _Sir John Van Olden Barnavelt_ is a masterpiece by Fletcher and Massinger; that _Captain Underwit_ is a comedy of Shirley's; and that the _Lady Mother_ (a piece of no particular merit) is by Glapthorne. I am not at all sure that I am right in ascribing _Dick of Devonshire_ to Heywood. But, whoever may have been the author, I am confident that this well-written play will be welcomed by all. In _Appendix I_ I give an account of the folio volume (Eg. MS. 1,994) from which the two last pieces are taken.

To Mr. ROBERT BOYLE, of St. Petersburg, I offer my sincere thanks for the very interesting note (_Appendix II_) which he sent me after reading the proof-sheets of _Barnavelt_. Elsewhere I have expressed my gratitude to Mr. F.G. FLEAY for his valuable help.

The preparation of this volume has been a work of great labour, for everything has been transcribed by my own hand; but the tedious delay in publication has been due in great part to circumstances beyond my control.

_January_ 27, 1883.

INTRODUCTION TO DICK OF DEVONSHIRE.

The play of _Dick of Devonshire_, now first printed (from Eg. MS., 1994[1]), is distinctly a well-written piece, the work of a practised hand. There is nothing amateurish in the workmanship; the reader is not doomed to soar into extravagances at one moment, and sink into flatnesses at another. Ample opportunities were offered for displays of boisterous riot, but the playwright's even-balanced mind was not to be disturbed. Everywhere there are traces of studious care; and we may be sure that a style at once so equable and strong was not attained without a long apprenticeship. Nor will the reader fail to note the lesson of charitableness and Christian forbearance constantly, yet unobtrusively, inculcated.

The hero of the play, Richard Pike, published, under the title of _Three to One_, a pamphlet (reprinted in vol. i. of Mr. Arber's valuable _English Garner_) describing his exploits. There is no date to the pamphlet; but it was no doubt issued very shortly after Pike's return, which took place on April 20, 1626. At the outset the writer apologises
for the rudeness of his style, "I know not," he says, "what the court of
a king means, nor what the fine phrases of silken courtiers are. A good
ship I know, and a poor cabin; and the language of a cannon: and
therefore as my breeding has been rough, scorning delicacy; and my
present being consisteth altogether upon the soldier (blunt, plain and
unpolished), so must my writings be, proceeding from fingers fitter for
the pike than the pen." In those days a soldier was never at a loss to
express himself, and honest Dick Pike was no exception to the rule. He
goes straight to the point, and relates his adventures very vividly in
the homeliest language. Returning from an expedition against Algiers
"somewhat more acquainted with the world, but little amended in estate,"
he could not long rest inactive; and soon, "the drum beating up for a
new expedition," set out to try his fortunes again. The design was
against Cadiz; the fleet, under the command of the Earl of Essex,
numbered some 110 sail. There is no need to continue the story, for I
have nothing to add to the facts set forth in the pamphlet and the play.
If _Britannia's Pastorals_ had been written a few years later, we may be
sure that William Browne would have paid a fitting compliment to his
fellow-townsman's bravery. But Pike's famous deeds were not forgotten by
his countymen; for in a broadside of the late seventeenth century,
bearing the title of _A Panegyric Poem; or, Tavestock's Encomium_,[2] he
is thus enthusiastically praised:--

"Search whether can be found again the like
For noble prowess for our Tav'stock Pike,
In whose renowned never-dying name
Live England's honour and the Spaniard's shame."

There is a curious notice of our hero in a private letter, dated May 19,
1626, of Dr. Meddus to the Rev. Joseph Mead:[3]--"Yesterday being Holy
Thursday, one Pyke, a common soldier, left behind the fleet at Cadiz,
delivered a challenge to the Duke of Buckingham from the Marquis of ----,
brother-in-law to the Conde d'Olivares, in defence of the honour of his
sister; affirming, moreover, that he had wronged Olivares, the King of
Spain, and the King of England, and therefore he would fight with him in
any part of France. This Pike, a Devonshire man, being presented
prisoner to the Duke of Medina, he would needs have him fight at rapier
or dagger with a Spaniard, supposing he would not stand him two thrusts:
but Pyke, by a dexterous sleight, presently disarmed the Spaniard of his
rapier without hurting him, and presented it to the Duke," &c.

As to the authorship of the play, though I should be loth to speak with
positiveness, I feel bound to put forward a claim for Thomas Heywood.
Through all Heywood's writings there runs a vein of generous kindliness:
everywhere we see a gentle, benign countenance, radiant with love and
sympathy. On laying down one of his plays, the reader is inclined to
apply to him Tacitus' judgment of Agricola, "bonum virum facile
crederes, magnum libenter." Now, when we open _Dick of Devonshire_, the
naturalness and simplicity of the first scene at once suggest Heywood's
hand. In the second scene, the spirited eulogy on Drake--

"That glory of his country and Spayne's terror,
That wonder of the land and the seas minyon,
_Drake_, of eternall memory--"

and the fine lines descriptive of the Armada are just such as we might
expect from the author of the closing scenes of the second part of _If
you know not me, you know nobody_. Heywood was fond of stirring
adventures: he is quite at home on the sea, and delights in nothing more
than in describing a sea-fight; witness his _Fortunes by Land and Sea_, and the two parts of the _Fair Maid of the West_. But the underplot bears even clearer traces of Heywood's manner. Manuel is one of those characters he loved to draw—a perfect Christian gentleman, incapable of baseness in word or deed. Few situations could be found more touching than the scene (iii. 3), where Manuel defends with passionate earnestness the honour of his absent brother, Henrico, and tries to comfort his heart-broken father. Heywood dealt in extremes: his characters are, as a rule, either faultless gentlemen or abandoned scoundrels. Hence we need not be surprised that Henrico exceeds other villains in ruffianism as much as his brother, the gentle Manuel, surpasses ordinary heroes in virtue. The characters of Henrico's contracted bride, Eleonora, and Catalina, the good wife of a vicious husband, are drawn tenderly and skilfully. Heywood's eyes were oftener dim with tears than radiant with laughter; yet, with all his sympathy for the afflicted and the fallen, he never took a distorted view of society, but preserved untainted to the end a perennial spring of cheerfulness.

I now leave the reader to the enjoyment of this old play, which, whether it be Heywood's or not, certainly deserves the attention of all faithful students of our inexhaustible dramatic literature.

NOTE.--I gratefully acknowledge the assistance that I have received from F.G. Fleay, Esq., in preparing this volume for the press. To ensure as much accuracy as possible, Mr. Fleay has read the proof-sheets throughout.[4] By the same gentleman's kindness I am able to correct the following misprints in the first volume:--

p. 37, l. 23, for "Yet can give," read, "Yet can I give."

p. 71, l. 18, del. comma after "live."

p. 103, l. 9, del. "we."

p. 119, 7 from bottom, for "she doth preferd doth see," read "she thus preferd," &c.

p. 142, 9 from bottom, for "vouchsafed," read "vouchsafe."

p. 154, l. 19, for "There they are," read "I, here they are."

p. 190, l. 24, for "woman" read "women."

p. 194, l. 12, for "unwist," read "unjust."

p. 228, last line, for "Equire," read "Squire."

p. 258, l. 29, for "1639," read "1612."

p. 274, l. 16, for "whore," read "whore's;" and in the next line, for "sunnes," read "sinnes."

p. 276, l. 4, after "Do not my Dons know," add "me."

p. 281, 4 from bottom, for "wo," read "two."

p. 311, l. 12, for "sol-Re-fa-mi," read "sol-Re-me-fa-mi." In l. 19, for "Ra." read "Re."
THE PLAY OF DICKE OF DEVONSHIRE.

_A Tragi-Comedy_.

Hector adest secumque Deos in praelia ducit.

Drammatis Personae.

_The Duke of Macada_,          |  
_The Duke of Girona_,          |  
_The Duke of Medina_,          |  
_The Marquesse d'Alquevezzes_, |  
_Don Pedro Gusman_, An ancient Lord.  
_Manuell_, His Sons.  
_Henrico_,  
_Don Fernando_, Governor of Cadiz Towne.  
_Teniente_, A Justicier.  
_Bustamente_, Captaine of Cadiz Castle.  
_Dicke Pike_  The Devonshire Soldier.  
_Don John_, A Colonel.  
_Buzzano_, Servant to Pedro Guzman.  
_Eleonora_, Daughter to Fernando.  
_Catelina_  Wife to Don John.  
_A Gentlewoman_.  
_An English Captaine_.  
_Mr. Jewell_.  
_Mr. Hill_.  
_Secretary_.  
_Mr. Woodrow_.  
_A Jaylor_.  
_Two Fryers_.  
_A Guard_.  
_English Soldiers_.  
_Spanish Soldiers_.

The Play of Dick of Devonshire.

_Actus Primus_.

(SCENE 1.)

_Enter Don Pedro Gusman, Henrico and Manuell, his sons;
Don Fernando and Eleanora, his daughter, and Teniente_.

_Pedr_. Gentlemen, y'have much honourd me to take
Such entertainement, but y'are welcome all.
'Twas my desire to have your company
At parting: heaven knowes when we shall mee te againe.

_Ten_. You are for _France_ then too?

_Man_. I wayte on my father.

_Pedr_. _Hen rico_.

_Ferd_. _Eleonora_.

_Ten_. But how chance, _Manuell_, your younger brother
Is at the Goale before you? What, no Lady
To please your eye?

_Man_. I am not
Yet weary of my freedome. May _Hen rico_
Mee te Joy in his Election: yet I know not
One I would sooner chuse to call a sister
Than _Eleonora_.

_Pedr_. At my returne from France all things shall bee
Consummate; in meane time let your owne hearts,
Knitt with the strongest tye of love, be merry
In mutuall embraces, and let your prayers
Fill our departing sayles. Our stay will not
Bee long, and the necessity of my affaires
Unwillingly doth take me from you.

_Hen_. Though I could wish your stay, my duty bidds me
Expect the enjoying of my happines
Till your returne from _France_.--Your blessing.

_Eleo_. How ever heaven dispose of _Eleonora_,
Pray write me in your thoughts your humblest daughter,
That shall make it a part of her devotions
To pray for you.

_Fer_. Well, sir, since your designe
Pulls you away, may your good Angell guard you.

_Ten_. The like wish I, _Don Pedro_.

_Fer_. _Manuell_, I hope
You will not long breath out of _Spanish_ ayre.
Farewell!

_Pedr_. My thanks to all.--Stay!

_[Pieces discharged_.

_Fer_. The Captaine of the Castle come to interpret
That language to us? What newes?

_Enter Bustamente_.
_Bust_. Such as will make all _Spaine_ dance in Canary.
The _Brasile_ fleet--

_Pedr_. Arriv'd?

_Bust_. Is putting into harbour, and aloud
Calls for a Midwife: she is great with gold
And longs to be delivered.

_Pedr_. No he _Spanyard_
Is not a true reioycer at the newes:
Be't a good omen to our Journey.

_Ten_. So we wish all.

_Pedr_. May we at our returne meet no worse newes
Then now at parting. My noble _Don Fernando_
And _Teniente_, once more farewell, (my daughter, I hope)

_Eleonora, Henrico_,--Nay, your good news deserves a farewell.

_Bust_. A soldier's farewell, a fast hand and heart;
Good fate to both.

[Ex. Pedr. and Man_.

_Hen_. Come, _Elinor_, let them discourse their Joyes
For the safe fleete: in thee all my delights
Embarke themselves.

_Bust_. Tush, lett 'em come; our shippes have brought with them
The newes of warre.

_Per_. What is that, Gentlemen?

_Ten_. I am speaking of a fleete of Enemyes.

_Per_. From whence?

_Ten_. From _England_.

_Fer_. A castle in the ayre.

_Ten_. Doe you not believe it?

_Fer_. I heard such a report,
But had no faith in't: a mere Potgun! [5]

_Bust_. Nay, sir,
'Tis certaine there hath bene great preparation,
If our Intelligence be true to us;
And a mighty Navy threatens the sea.

_Fer_. What's that to us?
How long hath it bene a voyce they were at sea!
I have ventured to discharge the soldiers
Which to keepe here in pay upon the rumour
Of a great fleete a comming, would both pester
The Towne and be unnecessary charge
To the King our Master.

_Ten_. But how if they intend us?

_Fer_. 'Tis not probable:
The time of yeare is past, sir, now; more then
The middle of October. Had they meant us
We should have heard their message in loud Cannon
Before this time.

_Bust_. I am of that opinion.

_Ten_. But _Don Fernando_ and _Bustamente_, call to mind
The time hath bene, when we supposed too
The season past, they have saluted us
With more then friendly Bulletts; tore the ribbs
Of our Towne up, made every house too hott
For the Inhabitants; had a spoyle of all,
Spight of our hearts.

_Fer_. One Swallow makes not Summer: because once
Our City was their prize, is't of necessity
It must be so againe?

_Bust_. Or were the Navy
Greater, as fame gives out it is the fayrest
That ever danced upon these Seas, why yet
Should we suspect for this City?

_Fer_. Because we dreame soe.

_Ten_. If you did dreame it may be as neare truth:
I wish the contrary, but know them daring Enemyes.

_Fer_. The world, we doe acknowledge, cannot boast
More resolution then the _English_ hearts
Seasond for action.

_Ten_. _Francisco Bustamente_, how is the Castle? what strength?

_Bust_. A fort impregnable, wanting neyther soldiers nor munition.

_Ten_. Well, looke to't.

_Fer_. How ere
That wilbe necessary; the fort lyes in
The mouth of danger, and it will become
You to discharge that duty, _Bustamente_.

_Bust_. With my best care.

_Ten_. I wish all well, and that you had not yet
Discharg'd your Companyes, _Don Fernando_.

_Fer_. Come, come; putt of your Jelousy,
Drinke downe the remembrance. We forget
Our fleetes arrivall; send your feares away;
Nothing but wine and mirth should crowne this day.
SCENE 2.

_Enter two Devonshire Merchants, as being in Sherryes_[6]

1. Heare you the newes?

2. Yes, that an English fleete
   Is making up to Cales.[7]

1. Our _Sherryes_ merchants,
   Though few of us be heere, shall soundly pay
   To the furnishing of this Navy.

2. Nay, I assure you
   Our shipps wilbe fast bound by _Spanish_ charms
   Not to get hence in hast.

1. The Divell allready
   Is furling up the sayles; would all the sackes
   Which we have bought for _England_ were in _Devonshire_
   Turned to small Beere, so we were but in _Tavistocke_
   To see it drawne out; were it nere so thin
   I'de drink a health to all the Dons in _Sherryes_
   And cry a pox upon 'em.

2. That word heard
   By any lowsy _Spanish_ Picardo[8]
   Were worth our two neckes, Ile not curse my Diegoes
   But wish with all my heart that a faire wind
   May with great Bellyes blesse our _English_ sayles
   Both out and in; and that the whole fleete may
   Be at home delivered of no worse a conquest
   Then the last noble voyage made to this Citty,
   Though all the wines and merchandize I have here
   Were ith' Seas bottome.

1. Troth, so would I mine.

2. I nere could tell yet from what roote this huge
   Large spreading Tree of hate from _Spayne_ to us,
   From us agayne to _Spayne_, took the first growth.

1. No? then lie tell you: let us season our sorrow
   With this discourse.

2. With all my heart I long for't.

1. You shall not loose your longing: then, sir, know
   The hate a _Spanyard_ beares an _Englishman_
   Nor naturall is, nor ancient; but as sparkes,
   Flying from a flint by beating, beget flames,
   Matter being neere to feed and nurse the fire,
   So from a tinder at the first kindled[9]
   Grew this heartburning twixt these two great Nations.
2. As how, pray?

   1. Heare me: any _Englishman_
   That can but read our Chronicles can tell
   That many of our Kings and noblest Princes
   Have fetcht their best and royallest wives from _Spayne_,
   The very last of all binding both kingdomes
   Within one golden ring of love and peace
   By the marriage of Queene _Mary_ with that little man
   (But mighty monarch) _Phillip_, son and heire
   To _Charles_ the Emperour.

2. You say right.

   1. Religion
   Having but one face then both here and there,
   Both Nations seemd as one: Concord, Commerce
   And sweete Community were Chaynes of Pearle
   About the neckes of eyther. But when _England_
   Threw of the Yoake of _Rome, Spayne_ flew from her;
   _Spayne_ was no more a sister nor a neighbour,
   But a sworne Enemy. All this did but bring
   Dry stickes to kindle fire: now see it burne.

2. And warme my knowledge and experience by't.

   1. Spaines anger never blew hott coales indeed
   Till in Queene _Elizabeths_ Raigne when (may I call him so)
   That glory of his Country and _Spaynes_ terror,
   That wonder of the land and the Seas minyon,
   _Drake_, of eternall memory, harrowd th'_Indyes_.

2. The King of _Spaynes_ west _Indyes_?

   1. Yes, when his Hands
      _Nombre de Dios, Cartagena, Hispaniola_,
      With _Cuba_ and the rest of those faire Sisters,
      The mermaydes of those Seas, whose golden strings
      Give him his sweetest musicke, when they by _Drake_
      And his brave Ginges[10] were ravishd; when these red apples
      Were gather'd and brought hither to be payrd--
      Then the _Castilian_ Lyon began to roare.

2. Had he not cause, being vexd soe?

   1. When our shipps
      Carrying such firedrakes in them that the huge
      Being great with gold, in labour with some fright,
      Were all delivered of fine redcheeked Children
      At _Plymouth, Portsmouth_ and other _English_ havens
      And onely by men midwives: had not _Spayne_ reason
      To cry out, oh Diables _Ingleses_!

2. It had not spoke such _Spanish_ else.

   1. When we did sett our feete even on their Mynes
   And brought their golden fagotts thence, their Ingotts
And silver wedges; when each ship of ours
Was able to spread sayles of silke; the tacklings
Of twisted gold; when every marryner
At his arrivall here had his deepe pockets
Crammd full of Pistoletts; when the poorest ship-boy
Might on the _Thames_ make duckes and drakes with pieces
Of eight fetchd out of _Spayne_: These were the Bellowes
Which blew the _Spanish_ bonfires of revenge;
These were the times in which they calld our Nation
Borachos,[12] Lutherans and Furias del Inferno.

2. Would we might now give them the selfe same cause
To call us soe.

1. The very name of _Drake_
Was a Bugbear to fright Children; Nurses still'd
Their little _Spanish_ Nynnyes when they cryde
"Hush! the _Drake_ comes."

2. All this must needs beget
Their mortall hate to us.

1. It did; yet then
We lovd them beyond measure.

2. Why?

1. Why, did not
_Spaine_ fetch gold from the _West Indies_ for us
To spend here merrily? She planted vines,
We eate the Grapes; she playd the _Spanish_ Pavine[13]
Under our windowes, we in our bedds lay laughing
To heare such Mynstrelsy.

2. How then turnd the windes?
Why did this beauteous face of love in us
Put on so blacke a Visour of hate to them?

1. Oh, sir, doe but looke backe to Eighty Eight,
That _Spanish_ glasse shall tell you, shew each wrinckle.
_England_ that yeare was but a bit pickd out
To be layd on their Kings Trencher. Who were their Cookes?
Marry, sir, his Grandees and great Dons of _Spaine_,
A Navy was provided, a royall fleete,
Infinite for the bravery of Admiralls,
Viceadmirall [sic], Generalls, Colonells and Commanders,
Soldiers, and all the warlike furniture
Cost or experience or mans witt could muster
For such a mayne designe.

2. Stay; Eighty Eight,--
Thirty eight yeares agoe: much about then
Came I into the world.--Well, sir, this fleete?

1. Which made the Sea fish wonder what new kingdome
Was building over theirs, beate downe the Billowes
Before them to gett thither. 'Twas such a Monster
In body, such a wonder in the eyes,
And such a[14] thunder in the eares of Christendome
That the Popes Holynes would needes be Godfather
To this most mighty big limbd Child, and call it
Th'Invincible Armado.

2. That's to say
A Fleete of Shipps not to be overcome
By any power of man.

1. These were the Whales,
These were the huge Levyathans of the Sea
Which roaring came with wide and dreadfull Jawes
To swallow up our Kingdom, Shipps & Nation.
The fame of this Armado flew with Terrou
Riding on Envyes wing; the preparation
Was wayted on with wonder, and the approach
Shewd the grim face of horror: yet gainst all these
Our Country and our Courages were armd.

2. _St. George_ for _England_!

1. And _St. George_ we cryde,
Albeit, we heard, the _Spanish_ Inquisition
Was aboord every ship with torture, torments,
Whipps strung with wyre, and knives to cutt our throates.
But from the armed winds an hoast brake forth
Which tare their shipps and sav'd ours.--Thus I have read
Two storyes to you; one, why _Spayne_ hates us,
T'other why we love not them.

2. Oh, sir, I thank you.

[_Exeunt_.

**SCENE 3.**

_Ent. Teniente, Don John, Henrico_.

_Ten_. I ever feard some ill fate pointed at
This Citty.

_Jo_. Makes the fleete this way?

_Hen_. _Buzzano_!

_Ten_. I did dreame every night of't, and the Ravens
With their unlucky throates never leave croaking
Some danger to us all.

_Hen_. Where's _Buzzano_? Villaine!

_Jo_. Be not discomforted.

_Ten_. Don _Fernando_, too,
Hath cut our strength off, taken away our swords
Should save our throates. I did prejudice
Too rashly of the _English_; now we may
Yield up the Towne.—Sirra, get you up to th' highest turret, that lookes three leagues into the Sea, and tell us what you can discover there.

_Buz_. Why, I can tell you ere I goe.

_Hen_. What?

_Buz_. Why there are fishes and shipps too in the sea; they were made for that purpose.

_Ten_. The fellow doates? climbe quickly, sirra, and tell us whither any bend to this place: there's a fleete abroad; skud, rascall.

_Hen_. Villayne, away; and cast your eyes into the Sea.

_Buz_. Ile be hangd first; some wiser then some: mine Eyes into the Sea? I see no reason for't.

_Ten_. Why stayest thou?--this slave is without sence. Get up and see, and report the truth.

_Buz_. Thats another matter: I will orelooke you all presently. _Exit_.

_Jo_. What were I best to doe? I doe not like these Navyes.

_Hen_. 'Tis past question, if they were kenn'd this way, that they intend to make another meale of this Citty.

_Ten_. The first was but a Breakfast: they have shrewd stomakes. Oh for a lusty strome to bury all their hopes in the waves now! one good swelling Gust would breake their ribbs in pieces.

_Jo_. No witches abroad?

_Buz_. I see, I see, I see!

_Enter Buzzano above_.

_All_. What?

_Buz_. Nay, I cannot tell what yet: something it is; I thinke it be a Towne.

_Hen_. Some Iland in the Sea!

_Buz_. It swims on the water.

_Jo_. 'Tis the fleete: come they this way?

_Buz_. Yes, th'are ships; I know 'em by their foule linen; now I see them plainely; they come, they come, they come!

_Hen_. How far off?
_Ten_. Speake, sirra.

_Buz_. If you would peace I might hear what they say; the wind serves to bring every word they speake: they make towards, yes, towards this Citty. A great fleete! stay, stay, look to your selves, Don: they spitt fire already, and have hung up a thousand flaggs of defyance. They are at the fort, the castle, at the castle: would I were pelted to death with Oranges and Lymons.

_Ten_. Here comes _Don Fernando_. What newes?

_Enter Fernando with Eleonora_.

_Fer_. Assured danger, gentlemen, for all our men Already are in a palsy and doe flye They know not whither. They are _English_: The Citty's allmost desperate.

_Ten_. _Don John_, come with me And helpe to encourage the remayning soldiers.

_Fer_. New supply shall quickly cheare you hearts.--

_Henrico_.!

_Hen_. Sir?

_Fer_. In this confusion, when a thousand feares Present themselves & danger with full face Lookes on the generall Towne, let me locke up This Treasure in your armes; & for you have At least an equall interest with mee In _Eleonora_, in your fathers house She may hope more security, being of strength; For this storme cannot last. But in your love She hath a stronger guard.

_Hen_. This act of confidence Binds me for ever to _Fernando_: come, Halfe of my soule, for we two must not bee In life devided. Though the Citty lye At mercy of the Enemy, yet from _Don Pedro Gusman's_ house not all mankind Shall take thee from me.

_Enter Buzzano and Spanyards flying_.

_Buz_. They come, they come, they come!

_Fer_. Committing this my Jewell to your trust I must unto my charge: my blessing!

_Ele_. Oh doe not leave me, sir; for without you What safety can I have? you are my father: Pray, stay you with me.

_Fer_. Oh, my Girle, I cannot, Dare not be so unfaithfull to the trust His maiesty put me in, though I would stay.
_Ele_. I feare if you goe hence all will not long be well.

_Hen_. Distrust you me, Eleonora?

_Ele_. No, indeed:
You ever had with me th'opinion
Of a most noble gentleman.

_Fer_. What then?

_Ele_. I know not what besides my feare; and that
Beggs I may share your fortune, since you may not
Take up such safety here as I have.

_Fer_. Come,
You are to blame: this heaven that now lookes on us
With rugged brow may quickly smile againe
And then I shall revisite my _Eleonora_.
So, farewell. [_Exit_.

_Hen_. Till then with greater care then were the Dragons
Supposd to watch the Golden Apples growing
In the _Hesperides_ shall _Henrico_ wayte
On his best loved. Oh, my _Eleonora_,
I would to heaven there were no war but here
To shoote love darts! each smile from this fayre Eye
May take an Army prisoners: let me give
My life up here unto these lipps, and yet
I shall, by the sweetnes of a kisse, take back
The same againe. Oh thou in whom alone
Vertue hath perfect figure, hide not day
In such a Cloud: what feare hath enterd here?
My life is twisted in a Thread with thine;
Were't not defenced, there could nothing come
To make this cheeke looke pale, which at your Eye
Will not fall dead before you.--

_Enter Buzzano_.

Sirra, let all your care and duty bee
Employed to cheere this Lady: pray, be merry.

_Buz_. Oh, sir, yonders such doings.

_Hen_. Hell on your bawling! not a sillable to affright her,
or I shall tune your instrument there.

_Buz_. Hele breake the head of my instrument!
Why, sir, weomen are not affraid to heare of doings.

_Hen_. Still jarring?

_Buz_. When the whole towne is altogether by th'eares you might give
me leave to jar a little my selfe:--I have done, sir.

_Hen_. Putt on thy merryest face, _Buzzano_.

_Buz_. I have but one face, but I can make a great many.
_Hen_. My best _Eleonora_, I shall soone returne:
In the meane time be owner of this house,
The possesour. All danger, sweet, shall dwell
Far off: Ile but enquire the state of things
In the Citty, and fly back to thee with loves wings.
        _Exit_.

_Ele_. I prithee call him backe.

_Buz_.                           Signior _Henrico_,
She has something more to say to you.    _Retire_.

_Hen_. To me, sweetest?

_Ele_.                 _Henrico_, doe you love me?

_Hen_. By this faire hand.

_Ele_.                        And will you leave me, too?

_Hen_. Not for the wealth of _Spaine_.

_Ele_. Since I must be your prisoner let me have
My keepers company, for I am afraid
Some enemy in your absence, like a woolfe
May ceize on me. I know not whither now
I ere shall see my father: doe not you
Ravish your selfe from me, for at the worst
We may dye here, _Henrico_: and I had rather
Fall in your eye than in your absence be
Dishonord; if the destinies have not
Spun out a longer thread, let's dye together.

_Hen_. Oh doe not racke my soule with these sad accents.
Am I _Henrico_? there is not any place
Can promise such security as this
To _Eleonora_. Doe not talke of dying,
Our best dayes are to come: putt on thy quiet,
And be above the reach of a misfortune.
Ile presently wayte on thee, by this kisse.

_Buz_. Would I might keepe your oath: so please you, lady,
_Buzzano_ will sweare too.

_Hen_. What?

_Buz_. That you'll be there and here agen presently.

_Hen_. Attend here, sirra.

_Buz_. If you must needes goe, pray, sir, keepe your selfe out of
Gun-shott.

_Hen_. Mind you your charge.

_Buz_. You shall heare a good report of my piece, I warrant you.
Take heed you be not sent to heaven with a powder: a company of hott
shotts[15] are abroad, I can tell you.
_Ele_. If you will goe may your success be faire.

_Hen_. Farewell; heaven cannot chuse but heare your prayer.

(EXIT._

_Buz_. Now what please you, madam? that I shall amble, trott, or walke?

_Ele_. Any pace.

_Buz_. Yet, if you would referre it to me, I'd use none of them.

_Ele_. What wouldst doe?

_Buz_. Why I would gallop or run, for I think long till I be at home in our Castle of comfort. If it please you Ile lead you a hand gallop in the plaine ground, trott up hill with you & rake[16] downwards.

_Ele_. Talke not of rackes, prithee; the times present too many.

_Buz_. Ride me as you will, then; I am used both to curbe and snaffle.

_Ele_. I prithee tell me, _Buzzano_--so, I heare thy master call thee--

_Buz_. He may call me at his pleasure, forsooth.

_Ele_. Dost thou know the nature of the _English_?

_Buz_. Both men and women: I travelled thither with an Embassadour. For the men Ile not misse you a haire of their condition; and for the women I know 'em as well as if I had bene in their bellyes.

_Ele_. Are they not cruell?

_Buz_. As Tygers, when they set on't: no mercy unlesse we aske them forgiveness.

_Ele_. That's somewhat yet.

_Buz_. But not to you; that's onely to men; for lett the women fall downe afore 'em never so often they'le rather fall upon them. Nay, some of them are so spitefull they'le breake their owne backes before they let 'em rise againe.

_Ele_. Foole, I meane not your way.

_Buz_. Keepe your owne way, madam; I meane the playne way.

_Ele_. Are they not unmercifull in their natures to such as are in their power, their Enemyes as we may be?

_Buz_. Their enemyes as we may be in their power! I had rather be cram'md into a cannon and shott against their ships then you should prove a witch & tell true now. The _Tartar_ is not halfe so grim; not a _Turke_ would use us so like _Jewes_ as they will. If it come to that once that they take the Towne You will see _Spanish_ Dons heads cryed up and downe: as they doe our Orenges and Lymons; and the woemens heads shall off, too,--not a maydenhead of gold shall scape 'em.
_Ele_. It is no valour to use Tyranny
Upon the conquerd: they have been reported
A noble nation; and when last the pride
Of this Citty adorn'd their victory, by command
Or their brave Generall, no outrage ever
The soldiers durst committ upon our persons:
Though all our wealth ran in full streames upon them
Our honours were preserved, or fame belys them.

_Buz_. No matter what fame sayes, perhaps I know more than she does;
& yet, now you talk of valour, they are not comparable to us.

_Ele_. How?

_Buz_. Why, valour is but the courage of a man; courage is, as they say,
the spirit of a man; and the spirit of a man is the greatnes, as we call
it, of his stomake. Now 'tis well knowen to the whole world they feed
better and eate more then we: ergo, we have better stomackes then they.
But, see! we have talk't our selves at home already, and the point
(port?) is open. Will't please you enter, or shall I enter before you?
I am your man, madam.

_Ele_. You know the way best:--whilst abroad they are
At fight, twixt hope and feare at home I warre.

__Exeunt__.

__Actus Secundus__.

(SCENE 1.)

_Alarum; as the soft musicke begins a peale of ordnance
goes off; then Cornetts sound a Battaille; which ended
enter Captaine, Master of a ship, Dick Pike, with musketts__.

_Cap_. Fought bravely, countrymen! Honour all this while
Sate in a Throne of smoake with sparckling eyes
Looking upon your courages & admiring
Your resolutions, and now rewards your sweat
With victory. The castle groanes at heart;
Her strongest ribbs are bruizd with battering Cannons,
And she hath tane into her bowells fire
Enough to melt her.

_Ma_. My Lord came bravely up to her & shewd a spirit
That commands danger; his honorable example
Gave us new hearts.

_Sol_. Faith, give the _Spanyards_ their due; they entertaind us
handsomely with hott meat; 'twas no cold welcome.

_Pike_. But I would not willingly swallow their plums; they would rise
shrewdly in a man's stomacke.

_Cap_. At the first shott, when the _Convertine_ came in, 3 men were
kill'd.

_Ma_. At the second 4, was't not?

_Cap_. At the third two more: one salutation
Came so close that, with the very wind,
My hands have almost lost the sense of feeling.
_Jewell_, thou mad'st thy muskett spitt fire bravely.

_Ma_. And my _Devonshire_ blade, honest _Dick Pike_,
Spar'd not his Sugar pellets among my _Spanyards_.

_Cap_. He did like a soldier, as he that charg'd his muskett told me:
in this service he hath discharg'd 70 bulletts.

_Pike_. I did my part, sir, and wish I had bene able to have layd 'em
on thicker; but I have lynd some bodyes gutts, much good doe 'em with it;
some of them have wish'd well to me.

_Cap_. Art hurt?

_Ma_. Where?

_Pike_. Nowhere; one of my flanckes itches a little; if a piece of lead
have crept in to hide it selfe cowardly I am not much in debt for't.

_Cap_. Let my Surgeons search it.

_Pike_. Search a pudding for plums; let my flesh alone; perhaps it wants
souldering. Shall we to't agen: I have halfe a score pills for my
_Spanyards_--better then purging comfits.

_Enter a Soldier_.

_Cap_. What newes?

_Sol_. The fort is yielded.

_Pike_. They have bene speechlesse a good while; I thought they'de yield
up the ghost shortly.

_Sol_. But on condition to march away with flying colours, which was
granted.

_Cap_. What's become of the Captaine of the fort?

_Sol_. _Don Francisco Bustament_ is carryed aboord our Generalls ship,
where he had a soldier like welcome; but he & all his company are put
over to _Port Reall_ upon the maine land because they should not succour
the Citty.

_Cap_. Unles he will swim to th'Iland.--And how fares the _Convertine_?

_Sol_. Her shroudes are tore to pieces & her tacklings to raggs.

_Cap_. No matter; she carryes the more honour.

_Sol_. 5 hundred Bulletts sticke in her sides.
_Pike_. 'Tis well they scaped her heart, lying all the fight little more than pistoll shott from 'em; her Starboard still to the fort & at least 200 Musketts playing upon her. I wish'd heartily some of our London roaring Boyes[17] had bene in the heate oft.

_Sol_. Wouldst have 'em twice burnt.

_Pike_. They should have found a difference betwixt the smoake of Tobacco and of a muskett; another manner of noise than _dam me & refuse me_[18], which they vomitt dayly. It might have done some of 'em good, for by that meanes they might have prayd heartily once in their lives.

_Cap_. The _Whitehall_[19] men did good service.

_Ma_. Who? the Collyers?

_Sol_. 4000 Bulletts their ordnance & the _Hollanders_ dischargd upon the Castle.

_Cap_. 'Twas well done of all sides, Bullyes[20]: but, since our forces are landed, let it be your care to looke well to the Ships: and honest _Dick_ of _Devonshire_ be not too carelesse of your hurts; he meanes to fight againe that provides for his recovery soonest. Hold thee, here is something to pay the Surgeon and to wash your wound withall.

_Pike_. My noble Captaine, I'le have care of my owne and drinke your health with it.

_Ma_. Thou deservest more than common encouragement: prithee, remember me too.

[_Exeunt Capt. & Mast_.

_Pike_. Why, now am I sorry I have no more hurt, gentlemen; but I tooke it as earnest to receive more if occasion bee. I have but a barrell to bestow among my Dons; while that lasts let 'em come & welcome,—the drinke shalbe spicd to their hands. Their complexions are blacke, they shall want no Balls to wash their faces; if any doe light in their bodies they may chance be scourd all over.

_Sol_. 2. We may hap to be in the suddes ourselves.

_Pike_. There will be charges savd then; for my part I am but one, and there are shotts enough.

_Sol_. 2. More by a score then I hope wilbe payd these two dayes.

_Pike_. Talke not of paying: here's more then a month comes to. Well, if our service be done, & there be any other liquor to be gott, wele drinke no salt water as long as this lasts.

_Sol_. 2. Come, let's have a dish to our countrymen & let's remember _Tavestock_.

_Pike_. Godamercy for that, boy. A match, a match!

[_Exeunt_.}
_Enter Henrico Gusman, his sword drawne, & Eleonora._

_Hen_. Yet the City is safe enough; feare not, _Eleonora_; The Bullets make no noyse here: if the Towne Should yield her strength up to th'invader, thou Art lockd up like a spirit in a Christall: Not an enchanted Castle, held up by Strong charme, is halfe so safe. This house, though now It carry not the figure & faire shape Which the first workeman gave it, eating Time Having devourd the face oft, is within A Sanctuary, & hath so much cunning Couchd in the body not a Laborinth Is so full of Meanders.

_Ele_. Sir, your presence Confirms me in opinion of my safety; Not of my life so much, for that's a thing I owe to nature & should one day be A-weary of it; like to Innes we take Our houses up, having but here a place Of _Lodging_ not of _dwelling_ :-but of _honour_ You give me my assurance, for in such A time of thicke confusions I much feare That might be hazarded. And who knowes what The soldier that hath no lawe but that Of cruelty and rapine, when like a Bird Of prey his Tallents are possessd of one So weake as I am--

_Hen_. He that durst offend Thee with a sillage or but fright that bloud Out of thy Cheeke to seek another place, Not daring to be seen there where it now Is of itselfe sufficient to ravish A mortall that with just eyes can looke on it, Had better be a divell. But a haire, The poorest part of thee & in this excellent Because 'tis thine, should any dare to ravish From these his soft companions, which the wind Would be for ever proud to play withall, H'had better dig his mothers coffin up And with his teeth eate what the wormes have left.

_Ele_. I know you will defend me.

_Hen_. Will defend thee! Have I a life, a soule that in thy service I would not wish expird! I doe but borrow My selfe from thee.

_Ele_. Rather you put to Interest And, for that principall you have credited To _Eleonora_ her heart is paid backe As the iust Usury.
_Hen_. You undoe me, sweet,
With too much love; if ere I marry thee
I feare thou'lt kill me.

_Ele_. How?

_Hen_. With tendring me too much, my _Eleonora_;
For in my conscience thou'lt extreamely love me,
And extreames often kill.

_Ele_. There can be no extreme of love[21], sir.

_Hen_. Yes, but there may; and some say Jealousy
Runs from the Sea, a rivolet but deducted
From the mayne Channell.

_Ele_. This is a new language.

_Hen_. Have you not heard men have been killd with Joy?
Our griefe doth but contract the heart, & gladnesse
Dilate the same; and soo too much of eyther
Is hott 'th' fourth degree.

_Ele_. Sir, your discourse
Is stuff of severall pieces and knitts not
With that you usd but now: if we can practize
A vertuous love there's no hurt to exceed in't.
--What doe you, Sir?

_Hen_. Looke on thee.

_Ele_. Why doe you eye me soe? this is not usuall.
Are you well?

_Hen_. Well, never better.

_Ele_. Pray heaven it bode me no unhappinesse!
How doth my father?

_Hen_. He's very well, too; feare not.

_Ele_. Still I read in your eyes--

_Hen_. What Babyes[22], pretty one? Thy owne face, naught else;
I receive that way all this beauty into
My heart, and 'tis perhaps come backe to looke
Out at the window. Come, Ile winke againe,
It shall not trouble you:--hence my trayterous thoughts.

_Ele_. Indeed you are not well.

_Hen_. Indeed I am not; all's not well within me.
Why should I be a villaine? _Eleonora_
Doe not looke on me; turne those eyes away,
They would betray thee to thy sorrow; or
Lett me by parting carry along with me
That which to know undoes thee.
_Ele_. Are you not hurt?

_Hen_. Yes.

_Ele_. Good heaven defend! I have a soveraigne Balme.

___Exit___

_Hen_. Vanish, you ugly shapes, & with her presence
Quitt your sharp stings! into what monstrous creature
Feel I myself a-growing! yet I cannot
Force backe the streame, it comes so fast upon me;
I cannot.

___Enter Eleonora___

_Ele_. Here, good _Henrico_, let me see your wound.

_Hen_. No, I am well againe; thankes, my best love.
Come, let us walke and talke; I had a fancy,
But 'tis no matter:--___Buzzano___!

___Enter Buzzano___

_Buz_. Did you call?

_Hen_. Yes, the Balme here--

_Buz_. What shall I doe with it?

_Hen_. Lay it up safe; 'tis good for a greene wound
But mines a blacke one:--and d'you heare, sirra,
Draw up the bridge, give entrance unto none.

_Buz_. All my fellowes are abroad, sir; there's nobody at home but I.

_Hen_. No matter, let none enter; were my father
Brought with a whirlwind backe, he finds all shutt
Till I have done.

_Buz_. Well, sir;--madam, all this is that you should not b' afraid:
you now see what a kind man he is,--he will suffer none to enter but
himselfe. ___Exit___

_Ele_. If all this proceed out of your care of me, how much am I bound
to acknowledge you. Sir, methinkes you minde me not.

_Hen_. Yes, I doe nothing else but thinke of thee, & of my father, too,
___Don Pedro___

_Ele_. Ha! I hope he's well.

_Hen_. I wish he were returned, my _Eleonora_, for both our sakes.

_Ele_. The same wish I, sir.

_Hen_. That then our Joys, which now like flowers nippd
With frost, hang downe the head as if the stalkes
Could not sustaine the toppes, they droope to much;--
At his returne th'art mine.
_Ele_. I am yours now
In holiest Contract.

_Hen_. That's the ground we build on:
Faith, since allready the foundation's layd,
Let's work upon't. Y'are mine, you say, allready--
Mine by all tearmes of Law, & nothing wanting
But the possession: let's not then expect
Th'uncertainty of a returne from France,
But be all one ymediately.

_Ele_. I understand you not.

_Hen_. Since y'are a Tree reservd for me what now
Should hinder me from climbing? All your apples
I know are ripe allready; 'tis not stealth,
I shall rob nobody.

_Ele_. You'le not be a divell?

_Hen_. No, I will but play the man with you: why, you know 'tis nothing.

_Ele_. Will you enforce mine honour? oh, _Henrico_,
Where have you left your goodnesse? sure you cannot
Be so ignoble, if you thinke me worthy
To be your wife at least, to turne _Eleonora_
Into a whore.

_Hen_. Pish! some hungry Landlords would have rent before
The Quarter day,--I doe no more: by faire meanes
Yield up your fort; the Tenement is mine owne
And I must dwell in't.

_Ele_. My feares pointed wrong:
You are no enemy, no wolfe; it was
A villaine I disturbed: oh, make me not
Find in your presence that destruction
My thoughts were so affrighted with.

_Hen_. We shall have such adoe now!

_Ele_. Your fathers house will prove no castle to mee
If you at home doe wound mee. 'Twas an Angell
Spoke in you lately not my Cheeke should bee
Made pale with feare. Lay not a lasting blush
On my white name:--No haire should perish here
Was vowed even now:--Oh let not a blacke deed,
And by my sworne preserver, be my death
My ever living death. _Henrico_, call
To mind your holy vowes; thinke on our parents,
Ourselves, our honest names; doe not kill all
With such a murthering piece. You are not long
T'expect, with the consent of men and angells,
That which to take now from me will be losse
A losse of heaven to thee. Oh, do not pawne it
For a poore minutes sin.

_Hen_. If't be a worke, madam, of so short time,
Pray let me beg a minutes privacy;
'Twill be soone done.

_Ele_.                Yes, but the horrour of
So foule a deed shall never: there's layd up
Eternity of wrath in hell for lust:
Oh, 'tis the devill's exercise! _Henrico_,
You are a man, a man whom I have layd up
Nearest my heart: in you 'twill be a sin
To threaten heaven & dare that Justice throw
Downe Thunder at you. Come, I know you doe
But try my vertue, whether I be profe
Against anothers Battery: for these teares--

_Hen_. . Nay, then I see you needs will try my strength:
My bloud's on fire, I boyle with expectation
To meete the pleasure and I will.

[He forces her in__.

_Ele_. Helpe, helpe!

_Enter Buzzano_.

_Buz_. Helpe? what nightingale was that? did one cry out for helpe?
there's no Christian soule in the house but they two & my selfe; and
'twas not mine, I know by the smallnes of the voice; twas some woman
cryde out, & therefore can be none but my young Lady,--it was she as
sure as I am hungry; he's with her. But why, having one man did she cry
out for more? oh, our _Spanish_ ovens are not heated with one Bayyn.[23]
Well, I must say nothing; my young Cocke has bene treading. Ile tread
softly & see what they doe:--but, see!

_Enter Henrico & Eleonora, loose haired and weeping_.

_Hen_. . What doe you looke after?

_Buz_. Why, sir, I looke after a voyce that appeard to me even now,
crying "helpe,"--a very small one.

_Hen_. If what thou seest or heard'st be ever muttered by thee
Though in thy sleep, villaine, Ile pistol thee.

_Buz_. Hum, it will not be safe to dreame of a knave shortly. Are you so
good at a gun? if you use this too often your birding piece will scarce
carry a yard levell.

_Hen_. . Come, dresse your hayre up & be wise at last:
No more, I have done.

_Buz_. So I thinke in my conscience,--he hath done with her.

_Hen_. . If you can be so simple to proclaime it,
I can be impudent.

_Ele_. . Yet dar'st thou live? & doe I live to see
Myselfe the shame of weomen? have I not
Wept teares enough to drowne me? then let fire
Enthrone it selfe within me & beget
Prodigious Cometts, that with flaming haires
May threaten danger to thee!

_Hen_. Nay, nay, nay, if you be so hott Ile brave you: like wine that's burnt you must be set light by, & then you'le come to a temper.

_[Exit_.

_Ele_. Oh, helpe me out of hell!

_Buz_. Sh'has bene at Barleybreake.[24]--Madam I must say nothing: --there is a Pistol and so forth:--but if you have occasion to use me, try mee; if I doe not prove an honester man to you then my Master, would my Cod piece point were broake. I know what I know, and yet Ile tell no tales;--but if ever I come to speake once--I say nothing.

_Ele_. Oh that I could not breath! how can I have A Joy in life whose honour's in the Grave!

_[Exeunt_.

(SCENE 3.)

_Enter Pike with his sword in his hand, a Cloake in his Arme_.

_Pike_. The freshnes of this Ayre does well after the saltnes of the Sea. A pleasant Country, too, to looke upon, & would serve well to live upon if a man had it & knew how to place it out of this hott Clymate! I would I had a matter, or a Mannour, indeede, of a 1,000 acres of these woodlands & roome to sett it in _Devonshire_; I would compare with any prince betweene _Tavistoke_ & _Parradice_ for an Orchard. But I could wish I were not alone here in this Conceit, dreaming of Golden Apples, least they prove bitter fruite. Whether are our land soldiers straggeld, troe? I would faine sett eye on some of them; Ile venture a little farther; _Devonshire Dick_ was never afraid yet.--How now, my hearts? upon a retreat so soone?

_Enter Three Soldiers_.

1. I, to the shipps; we have our loades here of the best merchandise we can find in this Quarter.

2. Will you taste a Lymon? excellent good to coole you.

_Pike_. They are goodly ones; where gott you them?

3. A little above here in an Orchard, where we left some of our Company.

_Pike_. But may one goe safe, without danger?

1. As safely as ever you gatherd nutts in _England_; the _Spaniards_ are all fled.

2. Not soe much as the leg of a _Spanyard_ left to squayle at their owne apple trees.

_[Exeunt Soldiers_.

_Pike_. Ile have a pull at these pomcitrons for my noble Captaine;
& if I had a Porters basket full of 'em I would count them no burthen in requitall of some part of the love he hath shewen me.

_[Exit._

(SCENE 4.)

_Enter 3 other Soldiers._

1. They cannot be far before us, I am sure.

2. But for the hedge we might descry them within two muskett shott.

3. Pray God the enemy be not within one musket shott of us behind their hedges; for I am sure I saw an Harquebuse whip ore the way before us but even now. Oh, oh!

_[Three or 4 shott dischargd, 2 soldiers slaine, the other falls on his belly._

_Enter Pike._

_Pike_. Are you bouncing? Ile no further. Sure these can be no Crowkeepers nor birdscarers from the fruite! what rascalls were my Countrymen to tell me there was no danger!--alas, what's here? 3 of our soldiers slaine! dead, shott through the very bowells! so, is this quite dead too? poore wretches, you have payd for your Capon sauce.

3. Oh, oh!

_Pike_. Here's some life in yt yet: what cheare? how is't, my heart of gold? speake, man, if thou canst; looke this way; I promise thee 'tis an honest man & a true _Englishman_ that speaks to thee. Thou look'st away as if thou didst not trust me: I prithee speake to me any thing, Ile take thy word & thanke the, too. Alas, I feare he's past it; he strives and cannot speake.--'Tis good to shift this ground; they may be charging more hidden villany while I stand prating heere.--He breathes still; come, thou shalt not stay behind for want of legs or shoulders to beare thee. If there be surgery in our ships to recover the use of thy tongue, thou mayst one day acknowledge a man & a Christian in honest _Dicke of Devonshire_. Come along;--nay now I feare my honesty is betrayd;--a horseman proudly mounted makes towards me, and 'tis a Don that thinkes himselfe as brave as _St. Jaques_. What shall I doe? there is no starting; I must stand th'encounter.--Lye still a while & pray if thou canst, while I doe my best to save my owne & the little breath thou hast left. But I am in that prevented too: his breath's quite gone allready, and all the Christian duty I have now left for thee is to close thy eyes with a short prayer: mayst thou be in heaven, Amen.--Now _Don Diego_, & _Don Thunderbolt_, or _Don Divell_, I defye thee.

_Enter Don John arm'd. Pike drawes & wrapps his Cloake about his arme._

_Jo_. Oh viliaco, diable, _Anglese_!

_[They fight._
Pike. A pox upon thee, _Hispaniola_! Nay, if you be no better in the Reare then in the Van I shall make no doubt to vanquish, & vanquash you, too, before we part, my doughty _Don Diego_.

_[He hath him downe, & disarms him_.

Jo. Mercy, _Englishman_, oh spare my life! pardonne moye je vous pre.

Pike. And take your goods? is that your meaning, _Don_, it shall be so; your horse and weapons I will take, but no pilferage. I am no pocketeer, no diver into slopps: yet you may please to empty them your selfe, good _Don_, in recompense of the sweet life I give you; you understand me well. This coyne may passe in _England_: what is your Donship calld, I pray.

Jo. _Don John_, a knight of _Spaine_.

Pike. A knight of _Spaine_! and I a Squire of _Tavestock_: well, _Don John_, I am a little in hast & am unmannerly constreynd to leave your _Castilian_ on foote, while my _Devonshire_ worship shall teach your _Spanish_ Jennett an _English_ gallop. A dios, signior.--

_Enter_ 12 _musketiers_.

Oh what a tyde of fortunes spight am I Now to swim through! beare up yet, Jovyall heart, And while thou knowest heavenly mercy doe not start. Once more let me embrace you, signior.

1. I say he is an _Englishman_: lett's shoote him.

2. I say the other is a _Spanyard_ & _Don John_; & we dare not shoote the one for feare of killing th'other.

Jo. Oh hold and spare us both, for we are frends.

1. But by your leave we will part your embraces: so disarme, disarme.

Jo. I thanke you, Countrymen; I hope you'le trust my honour with my armes.

1. Yes, take them signior; but you will yeild the _Englishman_ our prisoner?

Jo. Yes, with a Villaines marke.  _[He woundes him_.

1. A villaines mark, indeed! wound a disarmed soldiuer!

Jo. He triumphd in the odds he had of me, And he shall know that from the _Spanish_ race Revenge, though nere so bloudy, is not base. Away with him A prisoner into th'Citty!

Pike. Where you please, Although your Law's more merciles then Seas.

_[Exeunt_.}
(SCENE 5.)

_Enter Don Ferdinando, the Teniente, with attendants; Bustamente brought in with a Guard._

_Fer._ _Francisco Bustamente_, late Captaine of the Castle, Stand forth accusd of Treason gainst his Maiesty.

_Bust._ It is a language I not understand
And but that by the rule of loyalty
Unto my king and country I am made
Attendant to the Law, & in this honourd
Presence, the Governour & _Teniente_,
Under whose jurisdiction I hold place,
I would not beare nor heare it.

_Fer._ I'de be glad
You could as easily acquitt your selfe
Of guilt as stand up in your owne defence;
But, _Bustamente_, when it doth appeare
To law & reason, on which law is grounded,
Your great offence in daring to betray
The Spanish honour unto Infamy,
In yeilding up the fort on such slight cause,
You can no lesse then yeild yourselfe most guilty.

_Bust._ Farre be it from your thought, my honourd Lord,
To wrest the hazardous fortune of the warre
Into the bloudyer censure of the Law.
Was it my fault that in the first assault
The Canoniers were slayne, whereby our strength,
Our mayne offensive strength, was quite defeated
And our defensive part so much enfeebled
That possibility to subsist was lost,
Or by resistance to preserve one life?
While there was sparke of hope I did maintayne
The fight with fiery resolution
And (give me leave to speake it) like a Sodier.

_Ten_. To my seeming your resolution
Was forwardest to yeild then to repell;
You had else stood longer out.

_Bust._ We stood the losse of most of our best men,
And of our musketiers no lesse then fifty
Fell by the adverse shott; whose bodies with their armes
Were cast by my directions downe a well
Because their armes should neyther arme our foes
Nor of our losse the sight give them encouragement.

_Fer._ That pollicy pleades no excuse; you yet
Had men enough, had they bene soldiers,
Fit for a Leaders Justification.
And doe not we know that 6 score at least
Of those base Picaros with which you stuff'd
The fort, to feed, not fight,--unworthy of
The name of _Spaniards_, much lesse of soldiers--
At once ran all away like sheep together,
Having but ore the walls descryde th'approach
Of th'Enemy? Some of the feare-spurred villaines
Were overturnd by slaughter in their flight,
Others were taken & are sure to find
Our lawes as sharpe as either Sword or Bullet.
For your part, _Bustamente_, for that you have
Done heretofore more for your Countryes love,
You shall not doubt of honourable tryall,
Which in the Court of warre shalbe determind,
At _Sherris_, whitherward you instantly
Shall with a guard be sent.--See't done: away.

_Bust_. The best of my desire is to obey.

_[Exit with a Guard._

_Enter Don John, Pike (with his face wounded}, a Guard of musketts_.

_Fer_. Whence is that soldier?

1. Of _England_.

_Jo_. Or of hell.

1. It was our chance to come unto the rescue
Of this renowned knight, _Don John_,
Who was his prisoner as he now is ours.
Some few more of his mates we shot & slew
That were (out of their _English_ liquorishness)
Bold to robb orchards of forbidden fruite.

2. It was a fine ambition; they would have thought
Themselves as famous as their Countryman
That putt a girdle[25] round about the world,
Could they have said, at their returne to _England_,
Unto their Sons, "Looke Boyes; this fruite your father
With his adventurous hands in _Spayne_ did gather."

_Fer_. 'Tis a goodly fellow.

1. Had you not better have gone home without Lymons to eate Capons with your frends then to stay here without Capons to taste Lymons with us that you call Enemyes?

_Pike_. I could better fast with a noble Enemy then feast with unworthy frends.

_Fer_. How came he by these woundes?

_Pike_. Not by noble Enemyes: this on my face
By this proud man, yet not more proud then base;
For, when my hands were in a manner bound,
I having given him life, he gave this wound.

_Fer_. 'Twas unadvisd.

_Ten_. The more unmanly done:
And though, _Don John_, by law y'are not accus'd,
He being a common Enemy, yet being a man
You in humanity are not excus'd.

_Jo_. It was my fury & thirst of revenge.

_Fer_. Reason & manhood had become you better;
Your honour's wounded deeper then his flesh.
Yet we must quitt your person & committ
The _Englishman_ to prison.

_Ten_. To prison with him; but let best care be taken
For the best surgeons, that his wounds be look'd to.

_Pike_. Your care is noble, and I yeild best thankes;
And 'tis but need, I tell your Seigniories,
For I have one hurt more then you have seene,
As basely given & by a baser person:
A _Flemming_ seeing me led a prisoner
Cryde, "Whither doe you lead that _English_ dog,
Kill, kill him!" cryde hee, "he's no Christian;"
And ran me in the bodie with his halbert
At least four inches deepe.

_Fer_. Poore man, I pitty thee.--But to the prison with him.

_Ten_. And let him be carefully lookt to.

_[Exeunt omnes_.

_Actus Tertius_.

(SCENE 1.)

_Enter Captaine, Hill, Secretary, Jewell_.

_Cap_. Our Generall yet shewd himselfe right noble in offering ransome
for poore Captive _Pike_.

_Sec_. So largely, too, as he did, Captaine.

_Cap_. If any reasonable price would have bene accepted it had bene
given Mr. Secretary, I assure you.

_Jew_. I can testify that at our returne, in our Generalls name & my
owne, I made the large offer to the _Teniente_, who will by no meanes
render him. Sure they hold him for some great noble purchace.

_Sec_. A Barronet at least, one of the lusty blood, Captaine.

_Cap_. Or perhaps, Mr. Secretary, some remarkable Commonwealths man, a
politician in Government.

_Sec_. 'Twere a weake state-body that could not spare such members.
Alas, poore _Pike_, I think do thy pate holds no more pollicy than a
Pollax.

_Hill_. Who is more expert in any quality then he that hath it at his fingers ends; & if he have more pollicy in his braines then dirt under his nayles lle nere give 2 groates for a Calves head. But without all question he hath done some excellent piece of villany among the Diegoes, or else they take him for a fatter sheep to kill then he is.

_Cap_. Well, gentlemen, we all can but condole the losse of him; and though all that we all come hither for be not worth him, yet we must be content to leave him. The fleete is ready, the wind faire, and we must expect him no longer.

_Hill_. He was a true _Devonshire_ blade.

_Sec_. My Countryman, sir: therefore would I have given the price of a hundred of the best Toledoes rather then heare the misse of him at home complayned by his Wife and Children.

_Jew_. Your tendernes becomes you, sir, but not the time, which wafts us hence to shun a greater danger.

_Exeunt_.

(SCENE 2.)

_Enter Pike in shackles, nightcap, playsters on his face; a Jaylor_.

_Pike_. The fleete is gone & I have now no hope of liberty; yet I am well refreshd in the care hath bene taken for my cure. But was ever _English_ horse thus _Spanish_ bitted & bossd![26]

_Jay_. Sir, the care of your keeper, by whom this ease hath been procured, requires remuneration.

_Pike_. Here's for you, my frend.

_Jay_. I assure you, the best Surgeons this part of _Spaine_ affoords, through my care taken of you; & you may thanke me.

_Pike_. What an arrogant rascall's this!--Sir, I thought my thankes herein had chiefly appertaind to the humanity of the Governour, & that your especiall care had bene in providing these necessary shackles to keepe me from running into further danger: these I tooke to be the strong bonds of your frendship.

_Jay_. Sir, I hope they fitt you as well as if they had bene made for you. Oh, I am so much your servant that I doe wish 'em stronger for your sake.

_Pike_. 'Tis overwell as it is, sir.

_Jay_. You are most curteous.  

_Pike_. A precious rogue! If the Jaylors be so pregnant what is the hangman, troe? By the time my misery hath brought me to climbe to his
acquaintance I shall find a frend to the last gaspe. What's here? a Lady? are the weomen so cruell here to insult ore Captive wretches.

_Enter Catelyna & Jaylor._

_Cat_. Is this the English prisoner?

_Jay_. Yes, madam.

_Cat_. Trust me, a goodly person.

_Pike_. She eyes me wistly; sure she comes not to instruct her selfe in the art of painting by the patternes of my face!

_Cat_. Sir, shall I speake with you?

_Pike_. Yes, Lady, so you will not mock mee.

_Cat_. Indeed I cannot, but must needs acknowledge Myselfe beholding to you.

_Pike_. This I must beare; I will doe soe & call't my sweet affliction.

_Cat_. Will you heare me, sir? I am the Lady--

_Pike_. Yes, I doe heare you say you are the Lady; but let me tell you, madam, that Ladyes, though they should have tenderest sence of honour & all vertuous goodnesse, & so resemble Goddesses as well in soule as feature, doe often prove dissemblers & in their seemely breasts beare cruelty & mischiefe. If you be one of those, oh, be converted; returne from whence you came & know 'tis irreligious, nay divelish to tread & triumph over misery.

_Cat_. How well he speakes, yet in the sence bewraying A sence distracted: sure his captivity, His wounds, & hard entreaty make him frantick! Pray heare me, sir, & in two words Ile tell you Enough to win beleefe: I am the Lady Of the Knight vanquished by you, _Don John_.

_Pike_. Y'have said enough, indeed: pitty of heaven, What new invented cruelty is this! Was't not enough that by his ruthlesse basenes I had these wounds inflicted, but I must Be tortured with his wifes uniust reioycings! 'Twas well his politicke feare, which durst not come To glory in his handy worke himselfe, Could send your priviledg'd Ladyship.

_Cat_. Indeed, you much mistake me; as I live, As I hope mercy & for after life, I come for nothing but to offer thankes Unto your goodnes, by whose manly temper My lord and husband reassum'd his life; And aske your Christian pardon for the wrong Which by your suffering now pleads him guilty. Good sir, let no mistrust of my iust purpose Crosse your affection: did you know my love To honour and to honest actions,
You would not then reject my gratulations.
And since that deeds doe best declare our meaning,
I pray accept of this,
This money and these clothes and my request
Unto your keeper for best meats and wines
That are agreeable to your health and taste.
And, honest friend, thou knowest and darest, I hope,
Believe me I will see thee paid for all.

_Jay_. Yes, my good Lady.--Loe you, sir, you see
Still how my care provides your good: you may
Suppose the Governours humanity
Takes care for you in this, too.

_Pike_. Excellent Ladye I doe now beleive
Virtue and weomen are growne frends againe.

_Enter Don John_.

_Jo_. What magickal Illusion's this? 'tis she!
Confusion seize your charitable blindnesse!
Are you a prison visiter for this,
To cherish my dishonour for your merit?

_Cat_. My lord, I hope my Charity workes for your honour,
Releving him whose mercy spard your life.

_Jo_. But that I'me subiect to the law & know
My blowes are mortall, I would strike thee dead.
Ignoble & degenerate from Spanish bloud,
Darst thou maintaine this to be charity?
Thy strumpett itch & treason to my bed
Thou seekst to act in cherishing this villaine.

_Cat_. Saints be my witnesses you doe me wrong!

_Jo_. Thou robbst my honour.

_Pike_. You wound her honour and you robb yourselfe,
And me and all good Christians, by this outrage.

_Jo_. Doe you prate, sir?

_Pike_. Sir, I may speake; my tongue's unshackled yet,
And, were my hands and feete so, on free ground
I would mayntayne the honour of this Lady
Against an Hoast of such ignoble husbands.

_Jo_. You are condemnd allready by the Law
I make no doubt; and therefore speake your pleasure.
--And here come those fore whom my rage is silent.

_Enter Ferdinando, Teniente, Guard_.

_Fer_. Deliver up your prisoner to the _Teniente_.
I need not, sir, instruct you in your place
To beare him with a guard as is appointed
Unto the publicke tryall held at _Sherrys_.


_Ten_. It shalbe done.

_Fer_. How long hath he bene your prisoner?

_Jay_. 18 days.

_Fer_. You & the Surgeons out of the Kings pay
Ile see discharged.--You have, according to the Order,
Conveyd already _Bustamente_ thither
To yeild account for yeilding up the Castle?

_Ten_. 'Tis done, my Lord.

_Fer_. _Don John_, you likewise in his Maiesties name
Stand chargd to make your personall appearance
To give in evidence against this prisoner.

_Jo_. I shall be ready there, my Lord.

_Pike_. To _Sherrys_? they say the best sackes there.
I meane to take one draught of dying comfort.

_Cat_. I hope you'le not deny my company
To waite on you to _Sherris_?

_Jo_. No, you shall goe to see your frend there totter.[27]

_Pike_. I have a suite, my Lord; to see an _Englishman_,
A merchant, prisoner here, before I goe.

_Fer_. Call him; that done, you know your charge.

[_Exit Jaylor_.

_Ten_. And shall performe it.

[_Ex. Fer., John, Catalina_.

_Enter Jaylor & Woodrow_.

_Pike_. Oh, Mr. _Woodrow_, I must now take leave
Of prison fellowship with you. Your fortunes
May call you into _England_, after payment
Of some few money debts; but I am calld
Unto a further tryall: my debt is life,
Which if they take not by extortion,
I meane by tortures, I shall gladly pay it.

_Wo_. I have heard, & thought you by what I had heard
Free from feares passion: still continue soe,
Depending on heavens mercy.

_Pike_. You doe instruct me well; but, worthy Countryman,
Once more let me give you this to remember,
And tis my last request:--that when your better stars
Shall guide you into _England_, youle be pleased
To take my Country _Devonshire_ in your way;
Wheir you may find in _Taverstoke_ (whom I left)
My wife & children, wretched in my misfortunes.
Commend me to them, tell them & my frends
That if I be, as I suspect I shalbe,
At _Sherris_ putt to death, I dyed a Christian soldier,
No way, I hope, offending my iust King
Nor my religion, but the _Spanish_ lawes.

_[Exeunt_.

(SCENE 3.)

_Enter Don Pedro, reading a Letter, & Manuell_.

_Man_. Dear sir, let me have power to recall
Your graver thoughts out of this violent storme
Of passion that thus oerwhelmes your mind.
Remember what you are, and with what strength,
What more then manly strength, you have outworne
Dangers of Battale, when your warlike lookes
Have outfac'd horour.

_Pedro_. Oh, my son, my son,
Horour it selfe upon the wings of Death,
Stretcht to the uttermost expansion
Over the wounded body of an Army,
Could never carry an aspect like this,
This murthering spectacle, this field of paper
Stucke all with Basiliskes eyes. Read but this word,
'The ravisht _Eleonora_!!--does't not seeme
Like a full cloud of bloud ready to burst
And fall upon our heads?

_Man_. Indeed you take too deepe a sence of it.

_Pedro_. What? when I see this meteor hanging ore it?
This prodigy in figure of a man,
Clad all in flames, with an Inscription
Blazing on's head, 'Henrico the Ravisher!'

_Man_. Good sir, avoid this passion.

_Pedro_. In battailes I have lost, and seene the falls
Of many a right good soldier; but they fell
Like blessed grayne that shott up into honour.
But in this leud exploit I lose a son
And thou a brother, my _Emanuell_
And our whole house the glory of her name:
Her beauteous name that never was distayned,
Is by this beastly fact made odious.

_Man_. I pray, sir, be your selfe and let your Judgement
Entertaine reason: From whom came this Letter?

_Pedro_. From the sad plaintiffe, _Eleonora_.

_Man_. Good;
And by the common poast: you every weeke
Receiving letters from your noble frendes
Yet none of their papers can tell any such tidings.

_Pedro_. All this may be too, sir.

_Man_. Why is her father silent? has she no kindred,
    No frend, no gentleman of note, no servant
Whom she may trust to bring by word of mouth
Her dismall story.

_Pedro_. No, perhaps she would not
    Text up his name in proclamations.

_Man_. Some villaine hath filld up a Cup of poyson
    T'infect the whole house of the _Guzman_ family;
And you are greedyest first to take it downe.

_Pedro_. That villaine is thy brother.

_Man_. Were you a stranger
    Armd in the middle of a great Battalion
And thus should dare to taxe him, I would wave
My weapon ore my head to waft you forth
To single combatt: if you would not come,
    Had I as many lives as I have hayres,[28]
I'de shoot 'em all away to force my passage
Through such an hoast untill I met the Traytour
To my dear brother.--Pray, doe not thinke so, sir.

_Pedro_. Not? when it shall be said one of our name
    (Oh heaven could I but say he were not my son!)
Was so dishonorable,
So sacrilegious to defile a Temple
Of such a beauty & goodnes as she was!

_Man_. As beauteous is my brother in his soule
    As she can be.

_Pedro_. Why dost thou take his part so?

-Man_. Because no dropp of honour falls from him
    But I bleed with it. Why doe I take his part?
My sight is not so precious as my brother:
If there be any goodnes in one man
He's Lord of that; his vertues are full seas
Which cast up to the shoares of the base world
All bodys throwne into them: he's no drunkard;
I thinke he nere swore oath; to him a woman
Was worse than any scorpion, till he cast
His eye on _Eleonora_: and therefore, sir,
I hope it is not so.

_Pedro_. Was not she so?

-Man_. I doe not say, sir, that she was not so,
    Yet women are strange creatures; but my hope
Is that my brother was not so ignoble.
Good sir, be not too credulous on a Letter:
Who knowes but it was forgd, sent by some foe,
As the most vertuous ever have the most?
I know my Brother lov'd her honour so
As wealth of kingdoms could not him entice
To violate it or his faith to her.
Perhaps it is some queint devise of theirs
To hast your journey homeward out of _France_,
To terminate their long-desired marriage.

_Pedro_. The language of her letter speaks no such comfort,
But I will hasten home; & for you are
So confident as not to thinke his honour
Any way toucht, your good hopes be your guide
Auspiciously to find it to your wish.
Therefore my counsaile is you post before,
And, if you find that such a wrong be done,
Let such provision instantly be
Betwixt you made to hide it from the world
By giving her due nuptiall satisfaction,
That I may heare no noise of't at my comming.
Oh, to preserve the Reputation
Of noble ancestry that nere bore stayne,
Who would not passe through fire or dive the mayne?

___Exeunt_.

(SCENE 4.)

___Enter Fernando & Eleonora__.

__Fer___. Cease, Eleonora, cease these needles plaints,
Less usefull than thy helpe of hands was at
The deed of darkness,—oh, the blackest deed
That ever overclouded[29] my felicity!
To speake, or weepe thy sorrow, but allayes
And quenches anger, which we must now cherish
To further iust revenge. How I could wish
But to call backe the strength of Twenty yeares!

__Ele___. That I might be in that unborne againe, sir.

__Fer___. No, __Eleonora__, that I were so ennabled
With my owne hands to worke out thy wronge
Upon that wretch, that villaine, oh, that Ravisher!
But, though my hands are palsyed with rage,
The Law yet weares a sword in our defence.

___Enter Henrico__.

__Ele___. Away, my Lord & Father! see the monster
Approaching towards you! who knowes but now
He purposeth an assassinate on your life,
As he did lately on my Virgin honour?

__Fer___. Fury, keepe off me!

__Hen___. What life, what honour meane you? __Eleonora__,
What is the matter? Who hath lost anything?

_Ele_. Thou impudent as impious, I have lost--

_Hen_. Doe you call me names?

_Ele_. The solace of my life, for which--

_Hen_. A fine new name for a maidenhead!

_Ele_. May all the curses of all injured women
Fall on thy head!

_Hen_. Would not the curses of all good ones serve?  
So many might perhaps be borne: but, pray,
Tell me what moves you thus? Why stand you so
Aloofe, my Lord? I do not love to be
Usd like a stranger: welcome's all I looke for.

_Fer_. What boldness beyond madness gives him language!
Nothing but well-bred stuffe! canst see my daughter
And not be strooke with horror of thy shame
To th' very heart? Is't not enough, thou Traytour,
To my poore Girles dishonour to abuse her,
But thou canst yett putt on a devils visour
To face thy fact & glory in her woe?

_Hen_. I would I were acquainted with your honours meaning all
this while.

_Fer_. The forreine Enemy which came to the Citty
And twice danc'd on the Sea before it, waving
Flaggs of defyance & of fury to it,
Were nor before nor now this second time
So cruel as thou. For when they first were here
Now well nigh 40 yeares since, & marched through
The very heart of this place, trampled on
The bosomes of our stoutest soldiers,
The weomen yet were safe, Ladies were free
And that by the especial command
Of the then noble Generall: & now being safe
From common danger of our enemies,
Thou lyon-like hast broake in on a Lambe
And preyd upon her.

_Hen_. How have I preyed?

_Fer_. Dost thou delight
To heare it named, villain, th'hast ravished her.

_Hen_. I am enough abused, & now 'tis time
To speake a little for my selfe, my Lord.
By all the vows, the oaths & imprecaions
That ere were made, studied, or practised,
As I have a soule, as she & you have soules,
I doe not know, nor can, nor will confesse
Any such thing, for all your Circumventions:
Ile answer all by Law.
Oh, my Lord, heare me! By all that's good--

Peace, Eleonora; I have thought the Course. If you dare justify the accusation You shall to Sherrys, and then before the Judges Plead your owne cause.

And there Ile answer it.

There, if you prove the Rape, he shalbe forcd Eyther to satisfy you by marriage Or else to loose his periurd head.

And instantly I will away to Sherrys, There to appeale to the high Court of Justice: 'Tis time, I thinke, such slanderous accusations Assayling me; but there I shalbe righted.

You shall not need to doubt it:--come, Eleonora.

[ Exeunt. 

What will become of me in this, I know not: I have a shrewd guesse though of the worst. Would one have thought the foolish ape would putt The finger in the eye & tell it daddy! 'Tis a rare guift 'mong many maides of these dayes; If she speed well she'le bring it to a Custome, Make her example followed to the spoyle Of much good sport: but I meane to looke to't. Now, sir, your newes?

Enter Buzzano.

The most delicious, rare, absolute newes that ere came out of France, sir!

What's done there? have they forsaken the Divell & all his fashions? banishd their Taylors & Tyrewomen?

You had a father & a Brother there; & can you first thinke upon the Divell & his Limetwiggs.

Had, Buzzano? had a father & a Brother there? have I not so, still, Buzzano?

No, sir, your Elder Brother is--


Nay, you shall give me something by your leave; you shall pay the post:--good newes for nothing?

Here, here, Buzzano: speake quickly, crowne me with the felicity of a younger brother: is he dead, man?

No, he's come home very well, sir; doe you thinke I goe on dead
men's errands.

_Hen_. Pox on the Buzzard! how he startled my bloud!

_Buz_. But he is very weary & very pensive, sir; talkes not at all, but calls for his bed;--pray God your Father be not dead!--and desires when you come in to have you his Bedfellow, for he hath private speech with ye.

_Hen_, Well, sir, you that are so apt to take money for newes, beware how you reflect one word, sillable or thought concerning _Eleonora_: you knowe what I meane?

_Bus_. Yes, & meane what you know, sir.

_Hen_. What's that?

_Buz_. Ile keepe your Counsaile

_Hen_. My life goes for it else.

{ _Exeunt_.

_Actus Quartus_.

(SCENE 1.)

_Enter Henrico (as newly risen)_.

_Hen_. _Buzzano_! slave! _Buzzano_!

_Enter Buzzano with Cloake & Rapier_.

_Buz_. Signior, what a buzzing you make, as if you were a fly at Bartholomew-tyde at a Butchers stall: doe you think I am deafe?

_Hen_. No, but blind; do'st sleepe as thou goest?

_Buz_. No, but I goe as I sleepe, & that's scurvily.

_Hen_. Call my brother Manuell.

_Buz_. Brother _Manuell_!

_Hen_. How? pray (goodman rascall) how long have he & you bene Brothers?

_Buz_. I know not; may be ever since we were borne, for your father used to come home to my mother, & why may not I be a chipp of the same blocke out of which you two were cuitt? Mothers are sure of their children, but no man is able to sweare who was his father.

_Hen_. You are very lusty.

_Buz_. I eate eringoes[31] and potchd eggs last night.
_Hen_. Goe & call him.

_Buz_. What?

_Hen_. You hound, is he up?

_Buz_. No, he's in Bed, and yet he may be up too; I le goe see.

_Hen_. Stay, and speake low.--How now?

_Buz. falls downe_.

_Buz_. I can speake no lower unlesse I creepe into the Cellar.

_Hen_. I'me glad you are so merry, sir.

_Buz_. So am I; my heart is a fiddle; the strings are rozend with ioy that my other young Mr. is come home, & my tongue the sticke that makes the fiddle squeake.

_Hen_. Come hither, leave your fooling & tell me truely: didst sleepe to night or no?

_Buz_. Sleepe? Not that I remember: I le sweare (if my eyes should come out as 2 witnesses) that I nere slept worse; for what with your _Spanish_ flyes (the pocky, stinging musquitoes) & what with your skip Jacke fleas, the nap of my sleepe was worn off.

_Hen_. Didst heare nothing?

_Buz_. Not in my sleepe.

_Hen_. Collect thy sences; when thou wert awake didst thou heare nothing?

_Buz_. Nothing.

_Hen_. Twixt 12 & one?

_Buz_. 12 & one? Then was I in my dead sleepe, cursing the fleas.

_Hen_. Or about one & two.

_Buz_. That's Three:--Now the Beetle[32] of my head beats it into my memory that as you & your brother _Manuell_ lay in the high Bed, & I trondling[33] underneath, I heard one of you talke most stigmatically in his sleepe--most hornferously.

_Hen_. Right, now thou com'st to me,--so did I.

_Buz_. And then once or twice the sleepy voice cryde out, "Oh it was I that murthered him! this hand killd him!"

_Hen_. Art sure thou heardst this?

_Buz_. Am I sure these are my eares?

_Hen_. And dar'st thou sweare thou heardst it?
_Buz_. Lay downe 20 oathes, and see if Ile not take them.

_Hen_. And whose voice was it did appeare to thee?

_Buz_. Whose voice was it? Well said, yong Master! make an asse of your fathers man!

_Hen_. Come, come, be serious: whose voice?

_Buz_. Whose voice? why then, if your windpipe were slitt now and opend, there should the voice be found. I durst at midnight be sworne that the Ghost of your voice appeard before me.

_Hen_. No; me it frighted too; up stood my haire stiffe & on end.

_Buz_. As a Catts does at sight of a dog.

_Hen_. A cold sweat pearld in dropps all ore my body; For 'twas my Brothers voice, & were I calld Before a thousand Judges I must sweare It could be no mans els.

_Buz_. Why, then, I must sweare so, too.

_Hen_. "Oh it was I that murthered him! this hand killed him!"

[_Within, Man_] _Buzzano_!

_Hen_. He's up.

[_Man_] _Buzzano_!

_Buz_. I come.

_Hen_. Helpe to make him ready,[34] but not a word on thy life.

_Buz_. Mum.    [Exit_.

_Hen_. So let it worke; thus far my wheeles goe true. Because a Captaine, leading up his men In the proud van, has honour above them, And they his vassailers; must my elder brother Leave me a slave to the world? & why, forsooth? Because he gott the start in my mother's belly, To be before me there. All younger brothers Must sitt beneath the salt[35] & take what dishes The elder shoves downe to them. I doe not like This kind of service: could I, by this tricke, Of a voice counterfeited & confessing The murther of my father, trusse up this yonker And so make my selfe heire & a yonger brother Of him, 'twere a good dayes worke. Wer't not fine angling? Hold line and hook: Ile puzzle him.

_Enter Manuell & Buzzano_.

_Man_. Morrow, brother.

_Hen_. Oh, good morrow: you have slept soundly.
_Man_. Travellers that are weary have sleepe led in a string.

_Buz_. So doe those that are hangd: all that travell & are weary doe not sleepe.

_Man_. Why, Mr. _Buzzano_, why?

_Buz_. Midwives travell at night & are weary with eating groaning pyes[36], & yet sleepe not: shall I hooke you?

_Man_. Hooke me? what meanst?

_Buz_. These Taylors are the wittyest knaves that live by bread.

_Hen_. And why witty, out of your wisdome?

_Buz_. In old time gentlemen would call to their men & cry, "Come, trusse me": now the word is "Come, hooke me"; for every body now lookes so narrowly to Taylors bills (some for very anger never paying them) that the needle lance knights, in revenge of those prying eyes, put so many hooks & eyes to every hose & doublet.

_Man_. Well, sir, Ile not be hookd then now.

_Buz_. Tis well if you be not. [Exit_.

_Hen_. _France_ is an excellent country.

_Man_. Oh, a brave one.

_Hen_. Your Monsieurs gallant sparkes.

_Man_. Sparkes? oh, sir, all fire,
The soule of complement, courtship & fine language;
Witty & active; lovers of faire Ladies,
Short naggs & _English_ mastives; proud, fantastick,
Yet such a pride & such fantasticknes,
It so becomes them, other Nations (Especially the English) hold themselves
No perfect gentlemen till frenchifyed.

_Hen_. Tush, _England_ breeds more apes than _Barbary_.—
How chance my father came not home with you?

_Man_. He was too hard tyed by the leg with busines.

_Hen_. What busines?

_Man_. Tis but stepping into _France_.
And he perhaps will tell you.

_Hen_. Perhaps? tis well:
What part of _France_ did you leave him in?

_Man_. What part? why I left him at _Nancy_ in _Lorraine_. No, no,
I lye, now I remember me twas at _Chaalons_ in _Burgundy_.

_Hen_. Hoyda, a most loving child
That knowes not where he left his father, & yet
Comes but now from him! had you left in France
Your whore behind you, in your Table bookes
You would have sett downe the streets very name,
Yes, and the baudy signe, too.

_Man_. Hum, you say well, sir.
Now you are up to th'eares in Baudery,
Pray tell me one thing, Brother; (I am sorry
To putt forth such a question) but speake truly;
Have you not in my fathers absence done
A piece of worke (not your best masterpiece)
But such an one as on the house of Guzman
Will plucke a vengeance, & on the good old man
(Our noble father) heape such hills of sorrow
To beate him into his grave?

_Hen_. What's this your foolery?

_Man_. Pray heaven it prove soe: have not you defac'd
That sweet & matchles goodnes, Eleonora,
Fernando's daughter?

_Hen_. How defacd her?

_Man_. Hearke, sir: playd Tarquin's part and ravisht her.

_Hen_. 'Tis a lye.

_Man_. I hope so too.

_Hen_. What villaine speaks it?

_Man_. One with so wide a throat, that uttering it
'Twas heard in France; a letter, sir, informed
My father so.

_Hen_. Letter? from whom?

_Man_. A woman.

_Hen_. She's a whore.

_Man_. Twas Eleonora.

_Hen_. She's, then, a villanous strumpet so to write,
And you an asse, a coxcomb to beleive it.

_Man_. Nettled? then let me tell you that I feare
I shall for ever blush when in my hearing
Any names Henrico Guzman for my brother.
In right of vertue & a womens honour
(This deare wrongd Ladies) I dare call thee Villaine.

_Hen_. Villaine!

_They fight: Enter Ferdinand and attendants_.

_Fer_. Part them, part them!
Let me see his heart
Panting upon my weapons point; then part us.
Oh, pray, forbeare the roome.

Fy, Fy! two Brothers.
Two Eaglets of one noble Aery,
Pecke out each others eyes!—Welcome from _France_!
How does your honourd father?

Well, my Lord:
I left him late in Paris.

So, so; in _Paris_!
Hath he 3 bodyes? _Lorraine, Burgundy, & Paris_!
My Lord, his Highnes putts into your hand
A sword of Justice: draw it forth, I charge you
By the oath made to your king, to smite this Traytour,
The murtherer of my father!

I?
Yes, thou:
Thou, slave, hast bene his Executioner.

Where? when?
There, there; in _France_.

Oh heavenly powers!
Oh, intollerable villaine! parricide!
Monster of mankind! _Spaniards_ shame!

Pray, heare me:
Are you in earnest?

Earnest?
Be advisd.
Lay hold on him, the murtherer of my father:
I have armd proofes against him.

An armd devill,
And that's thy selfe! Produce thy proofes.

I will, sir;
But I will doe't by law.

You are up allready
Too deepe, I feare, in Law.

If you can, sett then
Your foote upon my head & drowne me, your worst:
Let me have Justice here.

Well, sir, you shall.
I can no lesse than lay upon you
The hand of my authority. In my Caroach[37]
You shall with mee to _Sherris_, 3 leagues off,
Where the Lords sitt to-morrow: there you must answer
This most unbrotherly accusation.

-Man_. And prove him a false caytiff.

-Fer_. I will be both your guard, sir, and your bayle
And make no doubt to free you from this Viper.

-Hen_. Viper!

-Fer_. Y'are bound to appeare at _Sherris_, sir;
And you were best not fayle.
I have a certaine Daughter there shall meete you. Come.

[_Exit Fer., Man., &_.[38]

-Hen_. Thither I dare you both, all three.--_Buzzano_!

-Buz_. Sir?

-Hen_. Saddle my Jennet? Ile to _Sherris_ presently.

-Buz_. And I?

-Hen_. And you; but I must schoole you, sirra.

[_Exeunt_.

(SCENE 2.)

-Enter Pike, shackled, & his Jaylour_.

-Jay_. Boon Coragio, man! how is't?

-Pike_. Not very well & yet well enough, considering how the cheating
dice of the world run.

-Jay_. I dare not, though I have a care of you, ease you of one Iron
unles I desire such Gyves my selfe.

-Pike_. Las, if they were all knockt off I'me loaden with Gyves,
Shackles, and fetters enough for the arrantest theefe that ever lay in
my owne country in Newgate.

-Jay_. Shackles, gyves, and fetters enough! I see none but these at your
heeles, which come on without a shoeing horne.

-Pike_. Yes, at my heart I weare them--a wife & children (my poore
Lambes at home); there's a chaine of sighes and sobbes and sorrow,
harder then any Iron; and this chaine is so long it reaches from
_Sherrys_ to _Tavestock_ in _Devonshire_.

-Jay_. That's farre enough in Conscience.
_Pike_. Could I shake those Chaines off I would cutt Capers: poore _Dick Pike_ would dance though Death pip'd to him; yes, and spitt in your Hangman's face.

_Jay_. Not too much of that nayther: some 2 dayes hence he will give you a choake peare[39] will spoyle your spitting.

_Pike_. Pheu!

_Jay_. For, let me see, to-day is Sunday; to-morrow the Lords sitt, and then I must have a care--a cruel care--to have your leggs handsome and a new cleane ruff band about your necke, of old rusty iron; 'twill purge your choller.

_Pike_. I, I, let it, let it: Collers, halters, & hangmen are to me bracelets and frendly companions.

_Knocking-within_.

_Jay_. So hasty? stay my leasure.--(_Enter 2 fryers_) Two fryers come to prepare you.  [_Exit_.

I. Hayle, Countryman! for we, though fryers in _Spaine_, Were born in _Ireland_.

_Pike_. Reverend sir, y'are welcome: Too few such visitants, nay none at all, Have I seen in this damnable Limbo.

2. Brother, take heed; doe not misuse that word Of Limbo.[40]

1. Brother _Pike_, for so we heare, Men call you, we are come in pure devotion And charity to your soule, being thereto bound By holy orders of our mother Church.

_Pike_. What to doe, pray, with me?[41]

1. To point with our fingers Out all such rockes, shelves, quicksands, gulfs, & shallowes Lying in the sea through which you are to passe In the most dangerous voyage you ere made: Eyther by our care to sett you safe on land, Or, if you fly from us your heavenly pilotts, Sure to be wrackt for ever.

_Pike_. What must I doe?

2. Confesse to one of us what rancke and foule impostumes Have bred about your soule.

1. What Leprosies Have run ore all your Conscience.

2. What hott feavers Now shake your peace of mind.

1. For we are come
To cure your old Corruptions.

2.                          We are come
To be your true and free Physitians.

1. Without the hope of gold, to give you health.

2. To sett you on your feete on the right way.

1. To _Palestine_, the _New Jerusalem_.

2.                          Say;
Will you unlocke the closet of your heart
To one of us? chuse which, & be absolvd
For all your blacke Crimes on a free confession?

1. To him or me, for you must dye to morrow.

_Pike_. Welcome!
To morrow shall I be in another country,
Where are no Examiners, nor Jayles,
Nor bolts, nor barres, nor irons. I beseech you
Give me a little respite to retire
Into the next roome, & I will instantly
Returne to give you satisfaction.

[_Exit_.

_Ambo_. Goe, brother.

1. A goodly man!

2. Well limbd & strong of heart.

1. Now I well view his face did not we two
At our last being in _Plymouth_ in disguise,
When there the King of _England_ rode about
To see the soldiers in their musterings
And what their armes were, just before this fleet
Sett out, did we not see him there?

2. May be we did; I know not; if he were there 'tis now out of my
memory.

_Enter Pike_.

1. Are you resolvd?

_Pike_. Yes.

2. To confesse?

_Pike_. I ha' don't already.

1. To whom?

_Pike_. To one who is in better place
And greater power then you to cure my sicke
Infected part, though maladies as infinite
As the sea sands, the grassy spears on earth,
Or as the dropps of raine & stars in the firmament
Stucke on me he can cleare all, cleanse me throughly.

2. You will not then confesse?

_Pike_. No, I confesse I will not.

1. We are sorry for you;
For Countrie's sake this Counsaile do I give you:
When y'are before the Lords rule well your tongue,
Be wary how you answer, least they tripp you;
For they know the whole number of your shipps,
Burthen, men & munition, as well
As you in _England_.

_Pike_. I thanke you both.

2. Prepare to dye.

[_Exeunt Fryers_.

_Pike_. I will so.--Prepare to dye! An excellent bell & it sounds
sweetly. He that prepares to dye rigges a goodly ship; he that is well
prepar'd is ready to launch forth; he that prepares well & dyes well,
arrives at a happy haven. Prepare to dye! preparation is the sauce,
death the meate, my soule & body the guests; & to this feast will I goe,
boldly as a man, humbly as a Christian, & bravely as an _Englishman_. Oh
my Children, my Children! my poore Wife & Children!

_Enter Jaylour, & 3 Spanish Picaroes chayned_.

_Jay_. Here's a chearefull morning towards, my brave blouds!

1. Yes, Jaylor, if thou wert to be hang'd in one of our roomes.

_Jay_. On, on; the Lords will sitt presently.

2. What's hee?

_Jay_. An _Englishman_.

3. A dog!

1. A divell!

2. Let's beate out his braines with our Irons.

_Jay_. On, on; leave rayling, cursing & lying: had you not run from the
Castle the hangman & you had bene "hayle fellow! well met:" On!

_All_. Crowes pecke thy eyes out, _English_ dog, curre, toad, hell
hound!

[_Exeunt_.

_Pike_. Patience is a good armour, humility a strong headpiece, would
I had you all three, I know where.

_Enter Bustamente shackled, & Jaylor_.

_Bust_. Whither dost lead me?
_Jay_. To a roome by your selfe: ’tis my office to have a care of my nurse children.

_Bust_. I have worne better _Spanish_ gaiters: thus rewarded for my service!

_Jay_. See, Capt. _Bustamente_; doe you know this fellow?

_Bust_. No.

_Jay_. The Englishman brought prisoner into the Citty, & from thence hither.

_Pike_. Oh, Captaine, I saw you at the fort performe the part of a man.

_Bust_. And now thou seest me acting the part of a slave. Farewell, soldier. I did not hate thee at the first, though there we mett enemyes; and if thou & I take our leaves at the Gallowes, prithee letts part friends.

[_A Table out, sword & papers[42]

_Jay_. Come along, you two.

_Pike_. Hand in hand, if the Captaine please: noble _Bustamente_, at the winning of the fort we had a brave breakfast.

_Bust_. True, but I doubt not we shall have worse cheare at dinner.

_Jay_. When was ever any meat well dressd in the hangmans kitchen!

[_Exeunt_.

(SCENE 3.)

_Enter Fernando, bareheaded, talking with the Duke of Macada; Duke Gyron, Medyna, Marquesse d'Alquevezzas; 2 Gen., one with Pikes sword, which is laid on a table; Jaylour, Teniente; Clarke with papers_.

_Mac_. Where's the _Teniente_?

_Clarke_. The Duke calls for you.

_Ten_. Here, my Lord.

_Mac_. ’Tis the King's pleasure that those fugitives Which basely left the fort should not be honourd With a judicall tryall, but presently (Both those you have at home & these in _Sherrys_) To dye by martiaall law.

_Ten_. My Lord, Ile see it done.

_Mac_. Dispatch the rest here.
_Jay_. Yes, my Lord; I'll bring them carefully together to end the business.

_Gyr_. Bring _Bustamente_ in.

[_Exit Jaylour_.]

_Mac_. My Lords, here's _Don Fernando_ relates to me two stories full of wonder; one of his daughter, Fam'd for her virtues, faire _Eleonora_, Accusing _Don Henrico_, youngest sonne To noble _Pedro Guzman_, of a rape; Another of the same _Henrico's_, charging His elder brother _Manuell_ with the murther Of _Pedro Guzman_, who went late to _France_.

_Gyr_. Are all the parties here?

_Fer_. Yes.

[Exit Fernan_.

_Enter Jaylour, Bustamente, Guard_.

_Gyr_. Bring them in.

_Mac_. _Bustamente_, The King, our master, looking with sharp eyes, Upon your traitorous yielding up the fort, Putts off your trial here; you must abide longer imprisonment.

_Bust_. I have already quitted My selfe, my lord, of that which you call Treason, Which had in any here (he doing the like) Bene a high point of honour.

_Alg_. These braves[43] cannot serve you.

_Gyr_. You must not be your owne Judge.

_Mac_. You gave the _English_ More glory by your base ignoble rendring That fort up then our Nation gott from them In all our undertakings.

_Bust_. Heare me, my Lords,

_Mac_. Sir, sir, w'have other anviles; _Bustamente_, Prepare your selfe for death.

_Bust_. For all my service!

_All_. Take him away!

_Bust_. You are Lyons & I your prey.

[Exit with Jaylour_.

_Mac_. Which are _Don Pedro's_ sons?
_Enter Fernando, Henrico, Manuell_.

_Fer_. These two.

_Mac_. Which youngest?

_Hen_. I, my Lord.

_Enter Jaylour_.

_Mac_. You charge this Gentleman, your elder brother, With murther of your father.

_Hen_. Which I can prove.

_Mac_. And hither flyes a ravisht Ladyes voice To charge you with a Rape; the wronged Daughter Of this most noble Gentleman.

_Hen_. Let them prove that

_Mac_. These accusations & the proofes shall meete Here face to face, in th' afternoone. Meantime Pray, _Don Fernando_, let it be your care To see these gentlemen attended on By a strong guard.

_Fer_. The wrongs done to my selfe Work me, my lord, to that.

_Man_. I would your Grace would heare me speake a little.

_All_. You shall have time.

_Med_. Take them away, And at their Tryall have the Lady here.

[_Ex. Fer., Hen., Man., & Jaylour_.

_Gyr_. Where is the _Englishman_?

_Clarke_. The _Englishman_!

_Alq_. What do you call him? _Dick of Devonshire_?

_Med_. Because he is a soldier let him have A soldier's honour; bring him from his prison Full in the face of the whole Towne of _Sherrys_, With drums and musketts.

_Mac_. How many soldiers are in the Towne?

_Clarke_. 5000.

_Med_. Let 200 march hither along with him as his guard: where's the _Teniente_?

_Ten_. Here, my Lord.
_Med_. Pray, see this done & in good order.

_Ten_. I shall. _Exit_.

_Enter Don John below_.

_Gyr_. What makes _Don John_ here? Oh, now I remember: You come against the _Englishman_.

_Jo_. Yes, my Lord.

_Enter his Lady and a Gentlewoman above_.

_Mac_. Give me the Note there of the _English_ advertisements.

[_They all conferre_.

_Lady_. Here may we see & heare: poore _Englishman_! Sadnes! I cast on thee a noble pitty, A pitty mixt with sorrow that my Husband Has drawne him to this misery, to whom The soldier gave life being at his mercy.

_Gent_. Twas bravely done, no doubt he'l speed the better For his mind.

_Lady_. I visited him in prison, And did with much adoe win from _Don John_ This journey, for I vowd to see th'event How they will deale with him.

_Gent_. I hope most fairely.

_Enter 2 drums, Teniente, divers musketts, Fernando with Pike (without band, an Iron about his necke, 2 Chaine's manackling his wrists, a great chaine at his heeles); Jaylour, 3 or 4 halberts. A Barre sett out_.

_Clarke_. Silence!

_Mac_. You see how much our _Spanish_ soldiers love you To give this brave attendance; though your Nation Fought us & came to hunt us to our deaethes.

_Pike_. My Lords, this, which in shew is brave attendance And love to me, is the worldes posture right, Where one man's falling downe setts up another. My sorrowes are their triumphes; so in kings courts, When officers are thrust out of their roomes, Others leape laughing in while they doe mourne. I am at your mercy.

_Mac_. Sirra _Englishman_, Know you that weapon?--reach it him.

_Pike_. Yes, it Was once mine; and drawes teares from me to think How 'twas forced from me.
Mac. How many Spanyards kill'd you with that sword?

Pike. Had I kill'd one
This Barre had nere bene guilty of my pleading
Before such Princely Judges: there stands the man.

Gyr. Don John, sett he on you or you on him?

Jo. He upon me first.

Pike. Let me then be torned
Into a thousand pieces.

Lady. My Husband speaks untruth.

Alq. Sett he on you first? more coward you to suffer an enemy be aforehand.

Pike. Indeed in England my countrymen are good at bidding stand; but
I was not now upon a robbery but a defence, sett round with a thousand
dangers. He sett upon me; I had him at my feete, sav'd him, and for my
labour was after basely hurt by him.

Fer. This was examined by me, my Lords;
And Don John, thus accus'd, was much ashamed
Of his unmanly dealing.

Gyr. He may be now soe.

Lady. I blush for him my selfe.

Alq. Disgrace to Spanyards!

Mac. Sirra, you English, what was the ship you came in?

Pike. The Convertine.

Mac. What Ordnance did she carry?

Pike. 40 peece.

Gyr. No, sir, but 38; see here, my Lord.

Alq. Right, no more then 38.

Mac. Your fort at Plymouth strong?

Pike. Yes, very strong.

Mac. What Ordnance in't?

Pike. 50 Peecees.

Gyr. Oh fye, doe not belye your country; there's not so many.

Alq. How many soldiers keepe you in that fort?

Pike. 200.
_Mac_. Much about such a number.—There is a little iland before _Plymouth_: What strength is that of?

_Pike_. I doe not know.

_Gyr_. We doe, then.

_Alq_. Is _Plymouth_ a walld Towne?

_Pike_. Yes, it is walld.

_Mac_. And a good wall?

_Pike_. A very good strong wall.

_Gyr_. True tis a good strong wall, and built so high One with a leape staffe may leape over it.

_Mac_. Why did not your good navy, being in such bravery, As it tooke _Puntall_ seize _Cales_?

_Pike_. Our Generall Might easily have tane it, for he had Almost a thousand scaling ladders to sett up; And without mayme to's army he might loose A thousand men: but he was loath to robb An almes-house when he had a richer market To buy a conquest in.

_Mac_. What was that market?

_Pike_. _Genoa or Lisbon_: wherefore should we venture Our lives to catch the wind, or to gett knockes And nothing else.

[They consult.]

_Mac_. A poast with speed, to _Lisbon_, And see't well mand.

_Ten_. One shalbe sent, my Lord.

[Exit. The soldiers laugh.]

_Alq_. How now, why is this laughter?

_Fer_. One of the soldiers, being merry among themselves, is somewhat bold with th'_English_, and sayes th'are dainty Hennes.

_All_. [Alq_.?] Hens! ha, ha, ha!

_Mac_. Sirra, view well these soldiers, And freely telle us, thinke you these will prove Such hens as are your _English_, when next yeare They land in your owne Country.

_Pike_. I think they will not, My lord, prove hens, but somewhat neere to hens.
_Mac_. How mean'st thou?

_Pike_. Let my speech breed no offence: I thinke they would prove pulletts.

_Gyr_. Dar'st thou fight With any one of these our _Spanish_ pulletts?

_Pike_. What heart have I to fight when tis beaten flatt To earth with sad afflictions? can a prisoner Glory in playing the Fencer? my life's at stake Allready; can I putt it in for more? Our army was some 14000 men Of which more than 12000 had spirits so high Mine never shall come neere them: would some of them Were here to feed your expectations! Yet, silly as I am, having faire pardon From all your Graces and your Greatnesses, Ile try if I have strength in this chayned arme To breake a rapier.

_Mac_. Knock off all his gyves; And he that has a stomacke for _Spaines_ honour To combate with this _Englishman_, appeare.

_Pike_. May he be never calld an _Englishman_ That dares not looke a divell in the face, _One stepps forth_. Come he in face of man, come how he can.

_Mac_. Your name?

_Tia_. _Tiago_.

_All_. Well done _Tiago_.

_Mac_. Let drums beate all the time they fight.

_Lady_. I pray for thee.

_Gent_. And I.

_[They fight: Pike disarmes & tripps him downe_.

_Pike_. Onely a _Devonshire_ hugg, sir:--at your feete I lay my winnings.

_Tia_. Diable!

_[Exit, biting his thumb[44]; the soldiers stampe_.

_Gyr_. Wilt venter on oanother?

_Pike_. I beseech you To pardon me, and taske me to no more.

_Alq_. Come, come, one more; looke you, here's a young Cockerell[45] Comes crowing into the pitt. _Another steps in_.


All_. Prithee, fight with him.

Pike_. I'me in the Lyon's gripe & to gett from him
There's but one way; that's death.

Mac_. _English_. What say you? will you fight or no?

Pike_. Ile fight.

All_. Give 'em roome! make way there!

Pike_. Ile fight till every Joynt be cutt in pieces
To please such brave spectators; yes Ile fight
While I can stand, be you but pleas'd, my Lords,
The noble Dukes here, to allow me choice
Of my owne Country weapon.

All_. What?

Pike_. A Quarter staffe,--this, were the head off.

Mac_. Off with the head, and roome!
How dost thou like this _Spaniard_?

Pike_. Well: he's welcome.
Here's my old trusty frend: are there no more?
One! what, but one? why, I shall make no play,
No sport before my princely Judges with one.
More sackes to the Mill! come, another! what, no more?

Mac_. How many wouldst thou have?

Pike_. Any number under six.

All_. Ha, ha, sure he's mad!

Mac_. Dar'st coape with Three?

Pike_. Where are they? let 'em shew their faces: so; welcome!

Mac_. How dost thou like these chickens?

Pike_. When I have drest them
With sorrell sopps Ile tell you.

Lady_. Now guard him heaven!

_Drums. They fight, one is killd, the other 2 disarmed_.

1. Hell take thy Quarter staffe!

2. Pox on thy quarters!

Mac_. The matter? why this noyse?

_A noyse within of Diable Englese_.

Jay_. The soldiers rayle, stampe & stare, and sweare to cutt
His throat for all the Jaylors care of him.
Mac_. Make proclamation, my lord _Fernando_,
That who soever dares but touch his finger
To hurt him, dyes.

_Fer_. I will, sir. [_Exit_.

_Lady_. This is done nobly.

_Mac_. Here, give him this gold.

_Ten_. The Duke _Macada_ gives you this gold.

_All_. And this.

_Ten_. The Duke of _Medina_ this; Duke _Gyron_ this;
&_ looke you, the Marquesse _Alqueveza_ as much as all the rest.

_Alq_. Where's any of my men? give him your Cloake, sirra;
Fetch him cleane Band and Cuffs. I embrace thee, _Pike_; And hugg thee in my armes: scorne not to weare A _Spanish_ livery.

_Pike_. Oh, my Lord, I am proud of't.

_Mac_. He shalbe with a Convoy sent to the King.

_Alq_. 4 of my gentlemen shall along with him:
Ile beare thy charges, soldier, to _Madrid_,
5 peeces of 8 a day in travell, &
Lying still thou shalt have halfe that.

_Pike_. On my knees
Your vassaile thankes heaven, you, and these Princes.

_Mac_. Breake up the Court till afternoon: then the 2 _Guzmans_ tryall.

_All_. Come, _Englishman_.

_Med_. How we honour valour thus our loves epresse:
Thou hast a guard of Dukes and Marquesses.

[_Exeunt all_.

_Actus Quintus_.

(SCENE 1.)

_Enter Teniente & Henrico_.

_Ten_. The Lords are not yett risen: let us walke & talke.
Were not you better yeild to marry her
Then yeild to suffer death? know you the law?

_Hen_. Law! yes; the spiders Cobweb[46], out of which great flyes breake
and in which the little are hangd: the Tarriers snaphance[47],
limetwiggs, weavers shuttle & blankets in which fooles & wrangling
coxcombes are tossd. Doe I know't now or not?

_Ten_. If of the rape she accuse you 'tis in her choise
To have you marry her or to have you hangd[48].

_Hen_. Hangd, hangd by any meanes! marry her? had I
The King of _Spaines_ 7 Kingdomes,
_Gallicia_, _Navarre_, the 2 _Castiles,
Leon, Arragon, Valentia, Granada_,
And _Portugall_ to make up 8, Ide lose them
All to be rid of such a piece of flesh.

_Ten_. How? such a piece of flesh? Why, she has limbes
Mad out of wax.[49]

_Hen_.          Then have her to some faire
And shew her for money.

_Ten_.                  Is she not sweet complexiond?

_Hen_. As most Ladyes are that studye painting.

_Ten_. What meate will downe your throat, when you scorne pheasant,
partridge, woodcocke & coney? Would I had such a dish.

_Hen_. Woodcocke and coney take to you, my _Don Teniente_; Ile none; and
because you keepe such a wondering why my stomach goes against the wench
(albeit I might find better talke, considering what ladder I stand upon)
Ile tell you, signior, what kind of wife I must have or none.

_Ten_. Pray let me see her picture.

_Hen_.                              Draw then this curtaine:
Give me a wife that's sound of wind and limbe;
Whose teeth can tell her age; whose hand nere felt
A touch lascivious; whose eyes are balls
Not tossd by her to any but to me;
Whose breath stinkes not of sweatmeates; whose lippes kisse
Onely themselves and mine; whose tongue nere lay
At the signe of the _Bell_ . She must not be a scold,
No, nor a foole to be in love with Bables[50];
No, nor too wise to think I nere saile true
But when she steares the rudder. I'de not have
Her belly a drum, such as they weave points on,
Unles they be taggd with vertue; nor would I have
Her white round breasts 2 sucking bottles to nurse
Any Bastards at them.

_Ten_.                I believe you would not.

_Hen_. I would not have her tall, because I love not
To dance about a May pole; nor too lowe
(Little clocks goe seldom true); nor, sir, too fatt
(Slug[51] shippes can keepe no pace); no, nor too leane,
To read Anatomy lectures ore her Carcas.
Nor would I have my wife exceeding faire,
For then she's liquorish meate; & it would mad me
To see whoremasters teeth water at her,
Red haird by no meanes, though she would yeild money
To sell her to some Jew for poyson. No,
My wife shall be a globe terrestriall,
Moving upon no axeltree but mine;
Which globe when I turne round, what land soever
I touch, my wife is with me, still Ime at home.

_Ten_. But where will you find such a wife on earth?

_Hen_. No, such a wife in the Moone for me doth tarry:
If none such shine here I with none will marry.

_Ten_. The Lordes are come.

_Hen_. I care neyther for Lords nor Ladies.

_Enter the Nobles as before; Fernando, Manuell, Clarke, Jaylor_.

_Mac_. Where are these gentlemen? sett 'em both to a Barre
And opposite, face to face: a Confrontation
May perhaps daunt th'offender & draw from him
More then he'de utter. You accuse your Brother
As murtherer of your father: where's the profe?

_Hen_. First call my fathers man in.

_Clark_. What's his name?

_Hen_. _Buzzano_.

_Clark_. Call _Buzzano_ in!

_Enter Buzzano_.

_Buz_. Here I am, here.

_Clark_. Stand out: whither goe you?

_Buz_. To stand out.

_Clark_. Stand there.

_Mac_. Now what can he say?

_Hen_. First, my Lord, heare mee:
My brother & I lying in one bed together,
And he just under us--

_Buz_. In my fleabitten Trundle bed.[52]

_Clark_. Peace, sirra.

_Hen_. About midnight I awaking,
And this _Buzzano_ too, my brother in his sleepe
Thus cryde out, "Oh, twas I that murtherd him,
This hand that kild him!"

_Gyr_. Heard you this, sirra?
_Buz_. As sure as I heare you now.

_Alq_. And you'le be sworne 'twas he that so cryde out?

_Buz_. If I were going to be hangd Ide sweare.

_Clark_. Forbeare the Court.

_EXIT Buzzano_.

_Mac_. All this is but presumption: if this be all
The shott you make against him your bullets stick
In a mud wall, or if they meete resistance
They backe rebound & fly in your owne face.

_Med_. Bring your best forces up, for these are weak ones.

_Hen_. Then here I throw my glove & challenge him
To make this good upon him: that at comming home
He first told me my father dyed in France,
Then some hours after that he was not dead
But that he left him in _Lorraine_ at _Nancy_,
Then at _Chaalons_ in _Burgundy_, & lastly
He said to _Don Fernando_ he was in _Paris_.

_Fer_. He did indeed.

_Mac_. What then?

_Hen_. Then, when in's chamber we were going to bed,
He suddenly lookd wild, catchd me by the hand
And, falling on his knees, with a pale face
And troubled conscience he confessed he killd him,
Nay, swore he basely murtherd him.

_Mac_. What say you to this?

_Alq_. Now he comes close up to you.

_Man_. He is my murtherer
For I am none, so lett my Innocence guard me.
I never spake with a distracted voice;
Nere fell to him on my knees; spake of no father,
No murtherd father. He's alive as I am,
And some foule divell stands at the fellowes elbow,
Jogging him to this mischefe. The Villaine belyes me,
And on my knees, my lord, I beg that I
And my white Innocence may tread the path
Beaten out before us by that man, my brother.
Command a case of rapiers to be sent for,
And lett me meete his daring. I know him valiant;
But I am doubly armd, both with a Courage
Fiery as his can be, and with a cause
That spitts his accusation full in the face.

_Mac_. The combate in this case cannot be granted,
And here's the reason: when a man accuses
A frend, much more a brother, for a fact
So foule as murther (murther of a father),
The Law leaps straight way to the Challenger
To take his part. Say he that doth accuse
Should be decrepitt, lame and weake, or sickly,
The other strong and lusty; thinke you a kingdome
Will hazard so a subject, when the quarrell
Is for a kingdome’s right? If y’are so valiant
You then must call the law into the field
But not the man.

_Man_. I have done; let law proceed.

_Mac_. This cannot serve your turne, say he does belye you;
He stakes against your body his owne soule.
Say there is no such murther, yet the Law
Fastens on you; for any man accus’d
For killing of his father may be rack’d
To draw confession from him. Will you confesse?

_Man_. I cannot, must not, will not.

_Mac_. Jaylour, take & prepare him for the racke:
Wele see it done here.

_Hen_. You are righteous Judges.

_Man_. Oh villaine, villaine, villaine!

_EXIT with the Jaylour_.

_Med_. Where’s the wrongd Lady?

_Alq_. Stand you still at the Barre.
You are now another man, sir; your scale turnes.

_Fernando fetches in Eleonora_.

_Mac_. Looke on the prisoner: doe you know him, Lady?

_Ele_. Would I had nere had cause to say I know him.

_Mac_. Of what doe you accuse him?

_Ele_. As the murtherer
Both of my name and honour. In the hurry,
When the Citty (they said) was ready to be taken,
I being betrothed to this young gentleman,
My father brought me to his father’s house,
Telling me their dwelt safety.--There dwelt villany,
Treason, lust, basenes! for this godlesse man
(The storme being ore) came in & forcd from me
The Jewell of my virgin honour.

_Hen_. False!

_Fer_. I would not have thee thinke (thou graceles wretch)
She, being contracted to thee, loving thee,
Loving thee far more dearly then her selfe,
Would wound her vertue soe, so blott her fame
And bring a scandall on my house & me,
Were not the fact most true.

_Hen_. Most false by all that ever man can sweare by.
We falling out, I told her once I nere
Would marry her; & soe she workes this mischiefe.

_Gyr_. You here stand chargd for ravishing her, & you
Must marry her or she may have your life.

_Mac_. Lady, what say you? which had you rather have,
His life or him?

_Ele_. I am not cruell; pay me my first Bond
Of marriage, which you seald to, & I free you
And shall with Joy run flying to your armes.

_All_. Law you?[53]

_Mac_. That's easy enough.

_Hen_. Rackes, Gibbetts, wheeles make sausages of my flesh first!
Ile be ty'd to no man's Strumpet.

_Alq_. Then you muste look to dye.

_Mac_. Lady, withdraw.

_Hen_. Well, if I doe, somebody shall packe.

_Ele_. Oh me, unfortunate Creature! [Exit.]

_Enter Manuell to be rackt; Jaylour & Officers_.

_Med_. _Don Manuell Guzman_ ere you taste the tortures,
Which you are sure to feele, will you confesse
This murther of your father?

_Man_. Pray, give me privacy a little with my brother.

_All_. [Alq_.?] Take it.

_Man_. O brother your owne Conscience knowes you wrong me:
Ile rather suffer on the Gallow Tree
Then thus be torne in pieces. Canst thou see mee
Thus worryed amongst hangmen? deare _Henrico_,
For heavens sake, for thine owne sake pitty mee.

_All_. [Alq_.?] What sayes he?

_Hen_. Cunning, cunning, cunning Traytour!
In my eare he confesses all again and prayes me
To speake to you.

_Mac_. Will you openly confesse?

_Man_. No, no, I cannot. Caytiffe, I spake not soe;
I must not wound my Conscience to lay on it
A guilt it knowes not. Ile not so dishonour
My father, nor my ancestours before me,
Nor my posterity with such an earthquake
To shake our noble house.

_Mac_. Give him the Law then.

_Man_. Ile meete a thousand deaths first.

_Hen_. Plucke, & plucke home, for he's a murtherous Villaine.

_Man_. Thou worse, a divell.

_Mac_. Racke him!

_Man_. Oh stay! for heavens sake spread your mercy!
I doe confesse the murther; I killd my father.

_All_. Take him off!

_Man_. This hand stabbd him.

_Mac_. Where?

_Man_. Neere _St. Germains_
In _Paris_, in a darke night, & then I fled.

_Mac_. Thy owne tongue is thy Judge; take him away:
To-morrow looke to dye: send him a Confessour.

_Jay_. Ile have a holy care of him.

[Exit Manuell, led by the Jaylour_.

_Hen_. Who's now, my lords, the Villaine?

_Enter Eleonora & Buzzano_.

_Ele_. Oh Justice, here's a witnesse of my Rape.

_Mac_. Did you see't, sirra?

_Buz_. See't! no, sir, would I had; but when she was in labour I heard
her cry out "helpe! helpe!" & the Gamboll being ended she came in like
a mad woman, ruffled & crumpled, her haire about her eares; & he all
unbrac'd, sweating as if he had bene thrashing; & afterwards he told me,
my lords, that he had downe diddled her.

_Hen_. I now am lost indeed, & on my knee
Beg pardon of that goodnes, that pure Temple
Which my base lust prophand, & will make good
My wrongs to her by marriage.

_Mac_. What say you, Lady?

_Ele_. He spurnd my mercy when it flew to him
And courted him to kisse it; therefore now
Ile have his life.

_Fer_. That life, so had, redeemes
Thine & thy fathers infamy. Justice! my Lords.
_Hen_. Cruell Creature!

_Mac_. Take him away & lead him to his brother;  
You both must die next morning.

_Hen_. I deserve it;  
And so that Slave, too, that betrayed his Master.

_Buz_. Why should I not betray my Master, when he betrayed his Mistris.

_Ele_. Get you gone, sirra.

    [Exeunt Henrico & Buzzano_.

_Mac_. You are dismissed: Faire Lady,  
You shall have Law, your Ravisher shall dye.

_Ele_. Oh that my life from death could set him free!  
    [Exit_.

_Mac_. Pray, _Don Fernando_, follow her & soften  
Her heart to pity the poor gentleman:  
The Crime is not so Capital.

_Fer_. I'll do my best.

    [Exit_.

_Mac_. That such a noble _Spanyard_ as _Don Pedro_  
Should be so cursed in's Children!

_Enter Buzzano, Don Pedro, Fernando & Eleonora_.

_Buz_. Hee's come, hee's come, my Lord! _Don Pedro Gusman_ is still alive,--see, see!

_Mac_. Let us descend to meet a happiness  
Crownes all our expectations.

_Pedro_. Whilst I meet  
A Thunder strikes me dead. Oh, poore, wrongd Lady,  
The poyson which the villaine pours on thy honour  
Runs more into my veins then all the Venome  
He spitts at me or my deare Boy, his brother.  
My Lords, your pardon that I am transported  
With shame & sorrow thus beyond my selfe,  
Not paying to you my duty.

_All_. Your love, _Don Pedro_.

_Mac_. Conceale your selfe a while; your sons wele send for,  
And shew them deaths face presently.

_Pedro_. I'll play a part in't. [Exit_.

_Mac_. Let them be fetcht, & speake not of a father.

_Ten_. This shall be done. [Exit_.
_Mac_. Is your Compassion, Lady, yet awake?
Remember that the scaffold, hangman, sword,
And all the Instruments death playes upon,
Are hither calld by you; 'tis you may stay them.
When at the Barre there stood your Ravisher
You would have savd him, then you made your choyce
To marry him: will you then kill your husband?

_Ele_. Why did that husband then rather chuse death
Then me to be his bride? is his life mine?
Why, then, because the Law makes me his Judge,
Ile be, like you, not cruell, but reprieve him;
My prisoner shall kisse mercy.

_Mac_. Y'are a good Lady.

_Med_. Lady, untill they come, repose your selfe.

[Exit Eleonora.]

_Mac_. How now? so soone come back? why thus returned?

_Enter Pike & a Gentleman, with Letters_.

_Gen_. Our Journey to _Madrid_ the Kinge himselfe
Cutts off, by these his royall letters sent
Upon the wings of speed to all your Graces.
He lay one night since at your house, my Lord
Where, by your noble Wife, he had a wellcome
Fitting his greatnes & your will.

_Alq_. I'me glad of't.

_Mac_. The King, our Master, writes heere, _Englishman_,
He has lost a subiect by you; yet referres
Himselfe to us about you.

_Pike_. Againe, I stand heere
To lay my own life downe, please his high Maiesty
To take it: for what's lost his fate to fall
Was _fortune de la guerre_, & at the feete
Of his most royal Maiesty & at yours
(My Princely Lords & Judges) low as th'earth
I throw my wretched selfe & begg his mercy.

_Mac_. Stand up; that mercy which you aske is signd
By our most royall master.

_Pike_. My thankes to heaven, him & your Graces.

_Mac_. The King further writes heere,
That though your Nation came in Thunder hither
Yet he holds out to you his Enemy
2 friendly proffers: serve him in his dominions
Eyther by land or sea, & thou shalt live
Upon a golden pension, such a harvest
As thou nere reapst in _England_.

_Pike_. His kingly favours
Swell up in such high heapes above my merit,
Could I reare up a thousand lives, they cannot
Reach halfe the way. Ime his, to be his Vassaile,
His Gally Slave, please you to chaine me to the oare;
But, with his highnes pardon & your allowance,
I beg one Boone.

_All_. What is't?

_Pike_. That I may once more
See my owne Country Chimneys cast out smoake.
I owe my life and service to the King,
(The king of _England_) let me pay that Bond
Of my allegeance; &, that being payd,
There is another obligation,
One to a woefull Wife & wretched Children
Made wretched by my misery. I therefore beg,
Intreat, emplore, submissively hold up my hands
To have his Kingly pitty & yours to lett me goe.

_All_. [_Alq_.?] Let him ene goe.

_Mac_. Well, since we cannot win you to our service,
We will not weane you from your Countryes love.
The king, our lord, commands us here to give you
A hundred pistoletts to beare you home.

_Pike_. A royall bounty, which my memory
Shall never loose; no, nor these noble favours
Which from the _Lady Marquesse Alquevezze_
Raynd plenteously on me.

_Alq_. What did she to thee?

_Gyr_. How did she entertaine thee?

_Pike_. Rarely; it is a brave, bounteous, munificent, magnificent
Marquezza! the great Turke cannot tast better meat then I have eaten
at this ladies Table.

_Alq_. So, so.

_Pike_. And for a lodging, if the curtaines about my bed had bene cutt
of Sunbeames, I could not lye in a more glorious Chamber.

_Mac_. You have something, then, to speake of our weomen when y'are in
_England_.

_Pike_. This Box, with a gold chaine in't for my Wife & some pretty
things for my Children, given me by your honourd Lady would else cry
out on me. There's a _Spanish_ shirt, richly lac'd & seemd, her guift
too; & whosoever layes a foul hand upon her linnen in scorne of her
bounty, were as good flea[54] the Divells skin over his eares.

_Mac_. Well said: in _England_ thou wilt drinke her health?

_Pike_. Were it a glasse as deepe to the bottome as a _Spanish_ pike is
long, an _Englishman_ shall doe't. Her health, & _Don Johns_ wives too.
Enter Jaylor.

Jay. The Prisoners are upon comming.

Mac. Stand by, Englishman.

Enter Teniente, Henrico, Manuell, Pedro (as a fryer); at another dore Eleonora.

Mac. Give the Lady roome there!

Clark. Peace!

Mac. Your facts are both so foule your hated lives Cannot be too soone shortned; therefore these Lords Hold it not fitt to lend you breath till morning, But now to cutt you off.

Both. The stroke is welcome.

Pedro. Shall I prepare you?

Hen. Save your paynes, good father.

Man. We have allready cast up our accounts And sent, we hope, our debts up into heaven.

Fer. Our sorrowes & our sighes fly after them.

Ped. Then your confession of the murther stands As you your selfe did sett it downe?

Man. It does; But on my knees I beg this marginall note May sticke upon the paper; that no guilt, But feare of Tortures frighted me to take That horrid sin upon me. I am as innocent And free as are the starres from plotting treason Gainst their first mover.

Pedro. I was then in France When of your fathers murther the report Did fill all Paris.

Man. Such a reverend habit Should not give harbour to so blacke a falshood.

Hen. Tis blacke, & of my dying; for 'twas I To cheate my brother of my fathers lands, Layd this most hellish plott.

Fer. 3 hellish sins, Robbery, Rape & Murther.

Hen. I'me guilty of all Three; his soul's as white And cleare from murther as this holy man From killing mee.

Pedro. No [know], there's a thing about me Shall strike thee into dust & make thy tongue
With trembling to proclayme thyselfe a Villaine
More then thou yet hast done:—See, tis my Eye.

_Hen_. Oh, I am confounded!  [_Falls_.

_Man_. But I comforted
With the most heavenly apparition
Of my deare honourd father.

_Fer_. Take thou comfort
By two more apparitions, of a father
And a lost daughter, yet heere found for thee.

_Man_. Oh, noble sir, I pray forgive my brother.

_Ele_. See, sir, I doe; & with my hand reach to him
My heart to give him new life.

_Fer_. Rise, my _Henrico_!

_Mac_. Rise & receive a noble minded wife
Worth troups of other weomen.

_Hen_. Shame leaves me speechles.

_Pedro_. Gett thee a tongue againe, & pray, & mend.

_Mac_. Letters shall forthwith fly into _Madrid_
To tell the King the storyes of Two Brothers,
Worthy the Courtiers reading. Lovers, take hands:
_Hymen_. & gentle faeryes strew your way:
Our Sessions turnes into a Bridall day.

_All_. Fare thee well, _Englishman_.

_Pike_. I will ring peales of prayers of you all,
My Lords & noble Dons.

_Mac_. Doe soe, if thou hast iust cause: howsoever,
When thy swift ship cutts through the curled mayne,
Dance to see _England_, yet speake well of _Spayne_.

_Pike_. I shall.--Where must I leave my pistoletts?

_Gent_. Follow mee.

[_Exeunt Omnes_.

FINIS.

INTRODUCTION TO _THE LADY MOTHER_.
The authorship of this anonymous play, now printed for the first time (from Eg. MS. 1994), is not difficult to discover. Any one who has had the patience to read the Plays of Henry Glapthorne cannot fail to be amused by the bland persistence with which certain passages are reproduced in one play after another. Glapthorne's stock of fancies was not very extensive, but he puts himself to considerable pains to make the most of them. In _The Lady Mother_ we find the same ornaments spread out before us, many of them very tawdry at their best. Glapthorne's editor has striven to show that the weak-kneed playwright was a fellow-pupil of John Milton's at St. Paul's. One cannot think of the two names together without calling to mind the "lean and flashy songs" and "scrannel pipes of wretched straw" in _Lycidas_.

Yet Glapthorne was a man of some parts. He had little enough dramatic power, but he writes occasionally with tenderness and feeling. In his poetical garden rank weeds choke up the flower-beds; but still, if we have patience to pursue the quest, we may pick here and there a musk-rose or a violet that retains its fragrance. He seems to have taken Shirley as his master; but desire in the pupil's case outran performance. It is, indeed, a pitiful fall from the _Grateful Servant_, a honey-sweet old play, fresh as an idyl of Theocritus, to the paltry faded graces of the _Lady's Privilege_.

A note at the end of _The Lady Mother_ in the hand-writing of William Blagrave, acting for the Master of the Revels, shows that the play was licensed in October, 1635. From a passage in II., 1, it would seem to have been produced at the Salisbury Court Theatre in Whitefriars. In the same year Glapthorne's comedy of the _Hollander_, according to the title-page, was being acted at the Cockpit, Drury Lane. His other pieces were produced rather later. I am inclined to think that _The Lady Mother_ in spite of the wild improbability of the plot and the poorness of much of the comic parts, is our author's best work. In such lines as the following (IV., 1) there is a little flickering of pathos:--

"Enough, good friend; no more.
Had a rude _Scythian_, ignorant of tears,
Unless the wind enforced them from his eyes,
Heard this relation, sure he would have wept;
And yet I cannot. I have lost all sense
Of pitty with my womanhood, and now
That once essentiaall Mistress of my soule,
Warme charity, no more inflames my brest
Then does the glowewormes uneffectuall fire
The ha[n]d that touches it. Good sir, desist
The agravation of your sad report; _[Weepe_.
Ive to much griefe already."

The "glowewormes uneffectuall fire" is of course pilfered from Hamlet, but it is happily introduced. There is some humour in the scene (I., 2) where the old buck, Sir Geoffrey, who is studying a compliment to his mistress while his hair is being trimmed by his servant before the glass, puts by the importunity of his scatter-brain'd nephew and the blustering captain, who vainly endeavour to bring him to the point and make him disburse. On the whole I am confident that _The Lady Mother_ will be found less tedious than any other of Glapthorne's pieces.
THE LADY MOTHER: A COMEDY.

BY HENRY GLAPTHORNE.

Written in 1635, and now printed for the first time.

The Play of The Lady Mother.

_Actus Primus_.

(SCENE 1.)

Enter Thorowgood, Bonvill & Grimes.

Bon. What? will it be a match man? Shall I kneele to thee and ask thee blessing, ha?

Tho. Pish! I begin to feare her, she does Dally with her affection: I admire itt.

Bon. Shee and her daughters Created were for admiration only, And did my Mistress and her sister not Obscure their mothers luster fancy could not Admitt a fuller bewty.

Tho. Tis easier to expresse Where nimble winds lodge, ore investigate An eagles passage through the agill ayre Then to invent a paraphrase to expresse How much true virtue is indebted to their Unparaleld perfections.

Bon. Nay[56], but shall I not be acquainted with your designe? when we must marry, faith to save charges of two wedding dinners, lets cast so that one day may yeild us bridegroome,--I to the daughter and thou to the mother.

Tho. She falls off With such a soddaine ambiguitie, From the strong heate of her profesd[57] love That I conceive she intends a regular prove Of my untainted Faith.

Grimes. Soe I thinke, too: when I was young the plaine downe-right way serv’d to woe and win a wench; but now woing is gotten, as all things else are, into the fashion; gallantts now court their Mistress with mumps & mows as apes and monkelys doe.

Bon. But cannot all your fluent witt interpret Why she procastinatts your promisd match? By this light, her daughter would be married tomorrow
If her mother and I had concluded on the Joynture.

_Tho_. The most evident reason she will give me of this unwelcomprotraccon is she has some new employment to put on me, which performd she has ingaged her selfe to certainty of her designing me an answerare [sic].

_Enter Lovell_.

_Grimes_. Here comes your Rivall, Mr. _Thorowgood_,--_Alexander_ the _Great_, her Ladishipps loving Steward.

_Bon_. But does he affect the lady; what's his character?

_Grimes_. He was by trade a taylor, sir, and is the tenth part of the bumbast that goes to the setting forth of a man: his dealing consists not much in weight but in the weight of his pressing Iron, under whose tyranny you shall perceave no small shrinking.

_Tho_. Well said, _Grimes_. On!

_Grimes_. He has alterd himselfe out of his owne cutt since he was steward; yet, if you saw him in my ladyes Chamber you would take him for some usher of a dancing schoole, as being aptest in sight for a crosse cap.

_Tho_. Excellent _Grimes_ still!

_Grimes_. By his cloathes you might deeme him a knight; but yet if you uncase him, you will find his sattin dublett naught but fore sleaves & brest, the back part buckram; his cloake and cape of two sorts; his roses and garters of my ladyes old Cypres: to conclude, sir, he is an ambodexter or a Jack-of-all-sides & will needs mend that which Nature made: he takes much upon him since the old Knight dyed, and does fully intend to run to hell[58] for the lady: he hates all wines and strong drinks--mary, tis but in publique, for in private he will be drunke, no tinker like him.

_Bon_. Peace, sirrah; observe.

_Lov_. So, let me see the _summa totalis_ of my sweet ladies perfections.

_Grimes_. Good, he has her in whole already.

_Tho_. Peace, _Grimes_.

_Lov_. _Imprimis, her faire haire; no silken sleave Can be so soft the gentle worm does weave. It[em], noe Plush or satten sleeke, I vow, May be compard unto her velvet brow. It[em], her eyes--two buttons made of iett; Her lippes gumd taffety that will not frett; Her cheeks are changeable, as I suppose,-- Carnation and white, lyllie and rose_.

_Grimes_. I, there it goes.

_Bon_. I protest I comend him; he goes through stitch with her like
the Master of his trade.

_Lov._ It[em] her brests two bottomes[59] be of thred,
By which love to his laborinth is led.
Her belly--

_Grimes_. I, marry, sir, now he comes to the purpose.

_Lov._ Her Belly a soft Cushion where no sinner
But her true love must dare stick a pin in her._

_Grimes_. That line has got the prick and prayse from all the rest.

_Lov._ Butt to that stuff of stuffs, that without scoff
Is Camills haire or else stand further off._

_Grimes_. How many shreads has he stoale here to patch up this lady?

_Lov._ The totall some of my blest deity
Is the magazine of Natures treasury_.--
Soe, this made up, will I take an occasion to dropp where she may find it. But, stay; here's company.

_Bon_. Mr. _Lovell_.

_Lov_. And see, I shall divulge myselfe.

_Grimes_. A foole, I doubt not.

_Bon_. Is your lady stirring?

_Lov_. She is risen, sir, and early occupied in her occasions spiritual, and domestick busines.

_Enter Lady & Magdalen_.

_Lady_. Sweet Mr. _Bonvil_.
The simple entertain[m]ent you receave here
I feare will scare you from us: you're so early
Up, you do not sleepe well.

_Tho_. I cannot looke on her
But lme as violent as a high-wrought sea
In my desires; a fury through my eyes
At every glance of hers invades my heart.

_Lady_. What ayles you, servant? are you not well?

_Bon_. 'Tis his humour, Madam; he is accustomed, though it be in company, to hold a dialogue with his thoughts. Please you, lady, to give his fever libertie; the fit will soon be overpasd.

_Tho_. She bears her age well, or she is not sped
Far into th'vale of yeares: she has an eye
Piercing as is an Eglets when her damme,
Training[60] her out into the serene air,
Teaches her face the Sunbeames.

_Bon_. Madam, I fear my friend
Hath falne againe in love; he practises
To himself new speeches; you and he are not
Broke off, I hope.

_Lady_. O, sir, I value my servant at a higher rate:
We two must not easily disagree.
Sire _Alexander_, attend in Mr. _Bonvill_.
My daughter's up by this time, and I would have him give her the first
salute. You had best be wary, _Bonvill_; the young citizen or the
souldier will rob you of her.

_Bon_. O, we feare not them: shall we goe, sir?

_Lady_. Nay, Ile detain my servant.

_Bon_. Harke you, sir, strike home; doe you heare?

[_Exeunt Bonvill, Grimes, Lovell & Mag_.

_Lady_. Servant, have you leasure
To hear what I inioyne you?

_Tho_. Your good pleasure.

_Lady_. What shall I doe? I can no longer beare
This flame so mortall; I have wearid heaven
With my entreaties and shed teares enough
To extinguish _Aetna_, but, like water cast
On coales, they ad unto my former heate
A more outragious fervor. I have tried
All modest meanes to give him notice of
My violent love, but he, more dull then earth,
Either conceives them not or else, possessd
With full affection of my daughter, scornes me.

_Tho_. Madam, wilt please you to deliver your pleasure?

_Lady_. _Thorowgood_,
Not clouds of lightning, or the raging bolt
Heavens anger darts at the offending world,
Can with such horrid rigor peirce the earth
As these sad words I must demonstrate to you
Doe my afflicted brest.--Ime lost; my tongue
When I would speake, like to an Isicle
Disturbd by motion of unruly winds
Shakes to pronounce't, yet freezes to my roofe
Faster by th'agitation.

_Tho_. Your full Judgment
Could not have found an apter instrument
For the performance of what you designe,
Then I experience how much any man
May become passive in obedience
To the intent of woman, in my truth.
Set the abstrusest comment on my faith
Imagination can resolve, my study
Shall mak't as easie as the plainest lines
Which hearty lovers write.
Enter Timothy.

Tim. Madam, this letter and his humble vows From your deserving sonn.

Lady. He writes me here he will be here tomorrow. Where left you him?

Tim. At your right worthy Cosens.

Lady. What manner of man is this Mr. Thurston He brings with him?

Tim. A most accomplishd gentleman.

Lady. 'Tis well: Mr. Thorogood, Weele walke into the Gallery, and there Discourse the rest.

Tho. I long till I receive the audience of it.

Tim. Your ladiship will vouchsafe to meete The Gent[lemen] in your Coach some two miles hence?

Lady. Ile thinke of it.

[Exeunt omnes.]

(SCENE 2.)

Enter Sucket and Crackby[61].

Suc. Come, deport your selfe with a more elated countenance: a personage of your rare endowments so dejected! 'tis fitt for groomes, not men magnanimous, to be so bashfull: speake boldly to them, that like cannon shott your breath may batter; you would hardly dare to take in townes and expugne fortresses, that cannot demolish a paltry woman.

Crac. Pox of this Country, it has metamorphisd me. Would I were in my native Citty ayre agen, within the wholesome smell of seacole: the vapor[s] rising from the lands new dunged are more infectious to me then the common sewer ith sicknes time. Ime certaine of my selfe Ime impudent enough and can dissemble as well as ere my Father did to gett his wealth, but this country has tane my edge of quite; but I begin to sound the reason of it.

Suc. What may it be imagind.

Crac. Why, here are no Taverns where for my crowne I can have food provocative, besides the gaining of many precious phrase[s] for (from?) divers gallants new frencheified. Theirs nothing to excite desire but creame and eggs, and they are so common every clowne devoures them. Were each egge at twelve pence, or as deare as lobsters, I could afford to eate them, but I hate all that is vulgar; 'tis most base.

Suc. Pish, tis dificience in your resolution:
Suppose your mistress were an enemy
You were to encounter in sterner duell.

_Crac_. 'Tis well my Enemie is a woman; I should fear else to suppose
the meeting. Resolution! how can a man have resolution that drinkes
nought but ale able to kill a Dutchman? Conduit water is nectar to it,

_Suc_. Nay, but I say, suppose--

_Crac_. Suppose! Why here are no wenches halfe so amorous as Citty
tripennies[62]: those that are bewtiful the dew is not so cold. I did
but begg a curtesie of a chambermaide, and she laughd at me! Ile to the
Citty againe, that's certaine; where for my angell I can imbrace
pl[enty]. If I stay here a little longer, for want of exercise I shall
forget whether a woman be fish or flesh: I have almost don't already.

_Suc_. O, heeres your uncle, move him; you conceive me;
He must disburse.

_Crac_. And 'tis as hard to wrest a penny from him as from a bawd.

_Enter Sir Gefferie and Bunche_.

_Sir Geff_. Erect that locke a little; theres a hayre
Which, like a foreman of a shop, does strive
To be above his fellowes. Pish! this glasse
Is falsly silverd, maks me look as gray
As if I were 4 score.

_Bun_. What does he want of it?

_Sir Geff_. Combe with more circumspection, knave; these perfumes
Have a dull odor; there is meale among them,
My Mrs. will not scent them.

_Crac_. Uncle, my friend,
My martiall fellow is deficient
In this ubiquitarie mettall, silver:
You must impart.

_Sir Geff_. This garter is not well tide, fellow: where
Wert thou brought up? thou knowest not to tie
A rose yet, knave: a little straiter: so,
Now, tis indifferent. Who can say that I
Am old now?

_Bun_. Marry, that can I or any one which sees you.

_Suc_. Death to my reputation!
Sir, we are gent[lemen] and deserve regard:
Will you not be responsible?

_Sir Geff_. Alas, good Captaine, I was meditating how to salute my lady
this morning. You have bin a traviler: had I best do it in the _Italian_
garbe or with a _Spanish_ gravity? your _French_ mode is grown so common
every vintners boy has it as perfect as his _anon, anon, sir_. Hum, I
must consider on it.

_Crac_. Nay, but uncle, uncle, shall we have answear concerning this
mony, uncle? You must disburse; that is the soldiers phrase. You see this man; regard him.

_Suc_. Death of valor! I can hold no longer; I shall rise in wrath against him.

_Crac_. Dee heare, Uncle? you must furnish him; he wilbe irefull presently, and then a whole bagg will not satisfie him; heele eate your gold in anger and drinke silver in great sack glasses.

_Sir Geff_. Pox o'this Congee; 't shalbe thus, no thus; That writhing of my body does become me Infinitly. Now to begett an active Complement that, like a matins sung By virgins, may enchant her amorous ear. The _Spanish Basolas[63] manos_ sounds, methinks, As harsh as a Morisco kettledrum; The _French boniour_ is ordinary as their Disease: hees not a gent that cannot parlee. I must invent some new and polite phrases.

_Crac_. Shall I have answere yet, sir.

_Sir Geff_. Pish, you disturb me.--Gratulate her rest, Force an encomium on her huswifry For being up so early.--_Bunch_, where is my nephew?

_Crac_. I have bin here this halfe hower and could not get answer.

_Sir Geff_. To what, good nephew?--I was meditating a little seriously.

_Crac_. Concerning this white earth.

_Sir Geff_. Youde know the nature of it? If it be marle 'tis good to manure land; if clay, to make tobacco pipes.

_Crac_. I meane mony.

_Sir Geff_. O mony, Nephew: Ide thought youde learnt ith Citty How to use mony: here we do imploy it To purchase land and other necessaries.

_Suc_. Infamy to fame and noble reputation! Old man, dost thou disdaine valour? I tell thee, Catterpillar, I must have mony.

_Sir Geff_. 'Tis reason good you should; it is fitting to cherish men of armes. There is a treasurer in the county, Captaine, pays soldiers pensions: if any be due to you Ile write my letter, you shall receive it.

_Bun_. Faith, there he mett with you.

_Crac_. I see a storme a coming. Uncle, I wilbe answerable upon account: my soldier must have mettal.

_Sir Geff_. Iron and Steele is most convenient for Souldiers; but, since you say it, Nephew, he shall have it: how much must it be?
_Suc_. A score of Angells shall satisfie for the confrontment you have
offred me in being dilatory.

_Sir Geff_. _Bunch_, deliver him ten pounds;--but, dee heare.

_Bunch_, let be in light gold; 'twill serve his turn as well as heavier:
it may be he is one of those projectors transports it beyond sea.

_Enter Magdalen_.

_Mag_. Sir, I come to give you notice my ladyes walkd into the garden.

_Sir Geff_. Life! is she upp so early?

_Mag_. An hower since, belieue it.

_Crac_. Is my Mistress stirring?

_Mag_. In truth, I know not.

_Sir Geff_. Nephew, demeane your selfe with[64] all respect
Toward the gentlewoman you affect.
You must learne with here since the citty
Could spare you none.--Ile to the lady.

[_Exeunt Bunch, Sir Geff. and Mag_.

_Crac_. Captaine, shalls into th'Celler, Captaine?

_Suc_. I like the Motion.

_Crac_. Come away, then: there is indifferent liquor in this house,
but that ith towne is most abominable. Weele drinke our owne healths,
Captaine.

_Suc_. Well considered; 'tis for our reputation.

[_Exeunt omnes_.

(SCENE 3.)

_Enter Bonvill, Clarinna, Belizea and Grimes_.

_Bon_. Come, you are wantons both: If I were absent,
You would with as much willingness traduce
My manners to them. What Idiots are wee men
To tender our services to women
Who deride us for our paines!

_Cla_. Why can you great wise men who esteeme us women
But equall with our parrets or at best
But a degree above them, prating creatures
Devoid of reason, thinke that when we see
A man whose teeth will scarce permitt his tongue
To say,--(he is soe like December come
A woing to the Spring, with all the ensignes
Of youth and bravery as if he meant
To dare his land-lord Death to single rapier)---
We have not so much spleene as will engender
A modest laughter at him?

_Bel_. Nay, theres his Nephew, _Crackby_, your sweet servant.

_Clar_. My Servant! I do admire that man's impudence,
How he dare speake to any woman.

_Bon_. Why, is he not flesh and blood?

_Clar_. Yes, but I question whether it be mans or no.
They talk of changlings: if there be such things
I doubt not but hees one of them.

_Bel_. Fie, Sister; 'tis a prettye gent, I know you love him.

_Clar_. You hitt it there, I faith,--You know the man?

_Bon_. Yes, very well.

_Clar_. Have you then ever seene such another monster?
He was begott surely in the wane of the moone,
When Natures tooles were at laime Vulcans forge
A sharpning, that she was forced to shake this lumpe together.

_Bon_. What man for heavens sake could your nicenes fancy?

_Clar_. Not you of all that ever I beheld.

_Bel_. And why, good wisdome?

_Clar_. Nay, do not scratch me because he is your choyse, forsooth.

_Bel_. Well, we shall see the goodly youth your curiositie has elected,
when my brother returns, I hope.

_Clar_. I hope soe, too; I marvill where this Cub is,
He is not roaring here yet.

_Enter Thorogood_.

_Bon_. Frend, thou hast lost
The absolu[t]st characters deliverd by this lady:
Would thou hadst come a little sooner.

_Tho_. Ladies,
I must desire your pardon for my friend:
I have some busines will a while deprive him
Your sweet companies.

_Clar_. Take him away; we are weary of him.

_Bel_. Sister, lets leave the gentlemen alone,
And to our chambers.

__Exeunt Bel. and Clar.__

_Bon_. _Grimes_, put to the doore and leave us.--
Whats the matter?  

_[Exit Grimes_.

_Tho_. Freind,
Ère I begin my story I would wish you
Collect yourselfe, awake your sleeping Spiritts,
Invoke your patience, all thats man about you
To ayd your resolution; for I feare
The newes I bring will like a palsie shake
Your soules indifferentenst temper.

_Bon_. Prethee, what is't which on the soddaine can
Be thus disastrous? 'tis beyond my thoughts.

_Tho_. Nay, slight it not: the dismall ravens noate
Or mandrakes screches, to a long-sick man
Is not so ominus as the heareing of it
Will be to you; 'twill like a frost congeale
Your lively heate,--yet it must out, our frendship
Forbids concealment.

_Bon_. Do not torture me;
I'me resoluted to heare it.

_Tho_. Your soe admired Mistress
Who parted from you now, _Belisea_,--

_Bon_. You have don well before
Your sad relation to repeat that sound;
That holy name whose fervor does excite
A fire within mee sacred as the flame
The vestalls offer: see how it ascends
As if it meant to combat with the sunn
For heats priority! I'me arm'd gainst death,
Could thy words blow it on me.

_Tho_. Here me, then:
Your Mistress--

_Bon_. The Epitome of virtues,
Who like the pretious relics of a Saint
Ought only to be seene, not touchd.

_Tho_. Yet heare me;
Cease your immoderate prayses: I must tell you
You doe adore an Idoll; her black Soule
Is tainted as an Apple which the Sunn
Has kist to putrifaction; she is
(Her proper appellation sounds so foule
I quake to speake it) a corrupted peice,
A most lascivious prostitute.

_Bon_. Howes this?
Speake it agen, that if the sacrilege
Thou'st made gainst vertue be but yet sufficient
To yeild thee dead, the iteration of it
May damne thee past the reach of mearcye. Speake it,
While thou hast utterance left; but I conceit
A lie soe monstrous cannot chuse but choake
The vocal powers, or like a canker rott
Thy tung in the delivery.

_Tho_. Sir, your rage
Cannot inforce a recantacion from me:
I doe pronounce her light as is a leafe
In withered Autumnne shaken from the trees
By the rude winds: noe specld serpent weares
More spotts than her pide honor.

_Bon_. So, no more:
Thy former words incenst me but to rage;
These to a fury which noe sea of teares,
Though shed by queenes or Orphants, shall extinguish;
Nay, should my mother rise from her cold urne
And weepe herself to death againe to save
Thee from perdition, 't should not; were there placd
Twixt thee and mee a host of blasing starrs,
Thus I would through them to thee!  [Draw.

_Tho_. Had I knowne
Your passion would have vanquishd reason thus,
You should have met your ruine unadvisd;
Hugd your destruction; taken what the lust
Of other men had left you. But the name
And soule of friendship twixt us I had thought
Gainst me, for declaration of a truth
By which you might be ransomed from the armes
Of her adulterate honor.

_Bon_. Yes, kind foole;
Perswade an _Indian_ who has newly div'd
Into the ocean and obtaind a pearle,
To cast it back againe; labour t'induce
_Turkes_ to contemne their _Alcoron_ ere you strive
To make me creditt my _Belissia_ false.  [Kneele_.
Forgive me, holy love, that I delay
So long to scourge the more than heathnish wrongs
Of this iniurious villaine, whome me thinks--
Blow him hence to hell
With his contagious slander! yet before
Thou doest fall by me as, if heaven have not
Lost all its care of Innocence, thou must doe,
Tell me what Divell urgd thee to detract
From virtue thus, for of thy selfe thou couldst not
(Unlesse with thee shee hath bin vicious) know it
Without some information: whoes the Author
Of this prodigious calumnie?

_Tho_. Her mother.

_Bon_. Ha! her mother?

_Tho_. Yes, she; that certaine Oracle of truth,
That pretious mine of honor, which before
She would exhaust, or yeild your innocence
A spoyle to vice, chose rather to declare
Her daughter's folly; and with powerfull teares
Besought me, by the love I bore togoodnes,
Which in her estimation had a roome
Higher than Nature, to reveale it to you
And disingage you from her.

Bon. Soe, rest there, [Put up_.
Ere thou beest drawne were the whole sex reduced
To one, left only to preserve earths store,
In the defence of women; who,[67] but that
The mothers virtues stands betweene heavens Justice
Would for the daughters unexampled sinne
Be by some soddaine Judgment swept from earth
As creatures too infectious. Gentle freind,
An humor, heavy as my soule was steep'd
In _Lethe_, seases on me and I feare
My passion will inforce me to transgresse
Manhood; I would not have thee see me weepe;
I prethee leave mee, solitude will suite
Best with my anguish. [Sitt downe.

Tho_. Your good Genius keepe you. [Exit_.

[Enter Belisea_.]

_Bel_. Why have you staid thus long?
Young _Crackby_ and his friend are newly up
And have bin with us. My sister has had
The modest bout with them: 'tis such a wench.
Are you a sleepe? why doe you not looke up?
What muse you on?

_Bon_. Faith, I was thinking where
In the whole world to find an honest woman.

_Bel_. An excellent meditation! What doe you take me for, my Mother
and my Sister?

_Bon_. You alway excepted; tis but melancholly;
Prethee bestow a kisse upon me, love;
Perchance that will expell it.

_Bel_. If your cure be wrought soe easily, pittie you should perish
for want of physick. [Kiss him_.

_Bon_. She kisses as sheed wont; were she unchast,
Surely her breath would like a _Stigian_ mist
Or some contagious vapor blast me; but
'Tis sweet as _Indian_ balme, and from her lips
Distills[68] a moisture pretious as the Dew
The amorous bounty of the wholesome morne
Throwes on rose buds; her cheeks are fresh and pure
As the chast ayre that circumscribes them, yet
Theres that within her renders her as foule
As the deformed' _Ethiope_.

_Bel_. What the matter?
Why do you staire so on me?

_Bon_. To admire
That such a goodly building as this same
Should have such vild stuff in itt.

_Bel_. What meanes this language?

_Bon_. Nothing, but only to informe you what
You know to well alreadie: _Belisia_, you are
--(I cannot call her whore)--a perjurd woman.

_Bel_. Defend me innocence! I scarce remember
That ever I made oath and therefore wonder
How I should breake on.

_Bon_. Have you not with imprecations beg'd
Heavens vengeance if you ere lovd man but me?

_Bel_. And those same heavens are vouchers[69]
I've kept my vowes with that strict purity
That I have done my honor.

_Bon_. I believe thee;
The divel sometimes speaks truth. Intemperate woman,
Thoust made that name a terme convertible
With fury, otherwise I should call thee soe,
How durst thou with this impudence abuse
My honest faith? did I appeare a guest
So infinitly worthles that you thought
The fragments of thy honour good enough
To sate my appetite, what other men
Had with unhallowd hands prophaind? O woman,
Once I had lockd in thy deceiving brest
A treasure wealthier then the _Indies_ both
Can in their glory boast, my faithfull heart,
Which I do justly ravish back from it
Since thou art turnd a strumpet.

_Bel_. Doe you thinke
I am what you have term'd me?

_Bon_. Doe I thinke
When I behold the wanton Sparrows change
Their chirps to billing, they are chast? or see
The Reeking Goate over the mountaine top
Pursue his Female, yet conceit him free
From wild concupiscence? I prithee tell me,
Does not the genius of thy honor dead
Haunt thee with apparitions like a goast
Of one thou'dst murdrd? dost not often come
To thy bed-side and like a fairy pinch
Thy prostituted limbs, then laughing tell thee
'Tis in revenge for myriads of black tortures
Thy lust inflicted on it?

_Bel_. Have you don?
Give me a little leave then ere my greife
Surround my reason. Witnes, gratious heaven,
Who, were you not offended at some sinn
I have unwittingly committed, would
Send sacred innocence it selfe to pleade
How much 'tis iniurd in me, that with zeale
Above the love of mothers I have tendred
This misinformed man. Ile not ask the authors
Of this report, I doe forgive them; may
A happier fate direct you to some other
May love you better; and my fate conferr
On me with speed some sudden sepulcher. _Exit_.

_Bon_. I shall grow childish, too; my passions strive
For my dead love to keepe my greife alive.

_EVENT_.

_ARCTUS SECUNDUS_.

_SCENE 1._

_Enter Sucket, Crackbie, Grimes_.

_Gr_. Gentlemen, the rarest scene of mirth towards!

_Suc_. Where? how, good _Grimes_?

_Gr_. Oh, the steward, the steward, my fine Temperat steward, did soe
lecture us before my ladie for drinking ... at midnight, has gott the
key of the wine Cellar from _Timothie_ the Butler and is gon downe
to make himself drunke in pryvate.

_Enter Timothie_.

_Tim_. Gentlemen, _Grimes_, away, away! I watcht him into the Cellar
when I saw him chose forthe one of the bottles of sacke, and hether is
retyringe with all expeditation. Close, close, and be not seene.

_Crac_. Oh, my fine steward!

_Exeunt_.

_Enter Alexander Lovell with a Bottle of Sacke and a Cup_.

_Lov_. Soe here I may be private, and privacie is best. I am the Steward
and to be druncke in publicke, I say and I sayt, were to give ill
examples. Goe to, I, and goe to; tis good to be merry and wise; an inch
in quietness is better than an ell of sorrow. Goe to and goe to agen,
for I say and I sayt, there is no reason but that the parson may forget
that ere he was clerke. My lady has got a cast of her eye since she
tooke a survey of my good parts. Goe to and goe to, for I say and I
sayt, they are signes of a rising; flesh is frayle and women are but
women, more then men but men. I am puft up like a bladder, sweld with
the wind of love; for goe to and goe to, I say and I sayt, this love
is a greife, and greife a sorrowe, and sorrows dry. Therefore come
forth, thou bottle of affection; I create thee my companion, and
thou, cup, shalt be my freind. Why, soe now,—goe to and goe to: lets
have a health to our Mrs, and first to myne; sweet companion, fill to
my kind freind; by thy leave, freind, Ile begin to my companion: health
to my Mrs! Soe, now my hands in: companion, fill, and heres a health to
my freinds Mrs. Very good, and now I will conclude with yours, my deare companion: stay, you shall pledge me presently, tis yet in a good hand; I will pledge both your Mrs first. Goe to and go to, freind; thou alwayes lookst on me like a dry rascall; give him his liquor; and soe with my Mrs I conclude. What say you, Companion? ha, do you compare your Mrs with myne? howes that? such another word and thou darst, Sirrah! off with your Capp and doe her Reverence! wilt tell me soe? goe to, I say and I sayt; lle make better language come out of that mouth of thine, thou wicked Carkasse. Freind, heres to thee: Ile shake thee, thou empty Rascall, to peeces, and as Hector drew Achilles bout the walls of Troy at his horse tayle, so shalt thou at a doggs tayle be dragd in vild disgrace throughout the towne. Goe to and goe to, I say and I sayt; lle have the dragd, sirr, ah lle have the dragd; perswade me not, good friend; let him yeild me a reason if he can. I, I, he had need to be squeezd; why tis true, this is one, but not to purpose. Oh, would you whisper with me? umh, umh, umh, away, lle heare no more: why, how now frend? ha, ha, ha, you have got a Cup to much; umh, goe to and goe to, you can hold no more, I see that, at this time; let me ene bring you to your chambers. 

[Flings away the bottle and sleeps.]

_Enter Timothy, Grimes, Sucket, Crackby, with flaggons of wine.

_Suc_. 'Tis well don, cherish valour.

_Crac_. Creditt me, my Captaine carries fortitude enough for a whole legion; twas his advice tooke in the _Busse_, and at _Mastricht_ his courage did conclude _Papenhams_ overthrow.

_Suc_. Pish, you to farr exemply. I have bin at some few skermishes, kild halfe a score or soe; but what of yt? men are but men.

_Tim_. What wines that, fellow _Grimes_?

_Grimes_. Sack by this light, the Emperor of liquors! Captaine, here tis well keepe of push of pike yet peirce like shott of Cannon: a Cup of this upon an onslaught, Captain?

_Suc_. Is beveredge for a Generall: I doe use to drinke it when I am engagd against a squadron or a whole company.

_Grimes_. He meanes of drunkards.

[Lovell grunts.]

_Suc_. Ha! Cinielaro an ambuscado! see, whos that lyes there pardue? fort of Mars! my wroth shall eate him up.

_Grimes_. Soe, soe, now softely letts to him: ha, alreadie dead drunke, as I am vertuous. Assist me gentlemen; _Timothy_, hast thou thy Salvatorie about thee.

_Tim_. Yes, heere, here.

_Grimes_. Quick, quick; make some plasters and clapp em on his face: here, bind this napkin about his hand; who has a garter, lets see, to bind it up?

_Suc_. Some blood, my sonn of _Mercury_, were neceseary for consummation
of the jest.

_Crac_. And here, _Grimes_, ty this cloath about his head: oh, for some blood!

_Grimes_. Here, I have prickt my finger.

_Tim_. Let you and I, Mr. _Crackby_, goe to buffitts for a bloody nose.

_Crac_. No, no, you shall pardon me for that, _Tim_; no, no; no boyes play.

_Suc_. So, so; now set him in the chaires. Hart of valour! he looks like a Mapp oth world. Death, what are these?

_Enter Musike_.

_Grimes_. The Town Waites whome I appointed to come and visitt us.

_Suc_. 'Twas well donn: have you ere a good song?

_Tim_. Yes, they have many.

_Suc_. But are they bawdy? come, sir, I see by your simpring it is you that sings, but do not squeake like a _French_ Organ-pipe nor make faces as if you were to sing a Dirge. Your fellowes may goe behind the arras: I love to see Musitions in their postures imitate those ayrey soules that grace our Citte Theaters, though in their noats they come as short of them as _Pan_ did of _Apollo_.

_Musike_.

_Grimes_. Well, sir, this is indifferent Musicke, trust my judgment. Sing, boy.

_A song_.

_Crac_. Now on my life this boy does sing as like the boy at the _Whitefryers_ as ever I heard: how say you Captain?

_Suc_. I, and the Musicks like theires: come, Sirra, whoes your Poett?

_Crac_. Some mad wag, I warrant him: is this a new song?

_Mus_. Tis the first edition, sir: none else but we had ever coppie of it.

_Suc_. But you wilbe intreated to let a gent have it?

_Mus_. By no meanes; the author has sworne to the contrary, least it should grow so wonderous old and turne a Ballad.

_Crac_. Well said, Captain; the tother health, Captain: heres good wine, good Tobackoe, good everything: had we but a good wench or two twere excellent.

_Suc_. Great _Alexander_, does not dreame of this, I warrant yee.

_Grimes_. Oh, hees fast enough; heele be ready to cast up his accounts the easier when my lady calls him.
_Crac_. Come, come; who payes the Musicke? Captain, you have my purse.

_Suc_. Truths a truth from Infidell or Pagan: I am in trust, and that's beleife, and so it shalbe saved. Pay the Musick? umh, where are they? let me see, how many's of you, 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6: good, can any of you daunce?

_Mus_. Daunce? Yes, sir, we can shake our legs or soe.

_Suc_. So said so don, brave ladd; come, letts have a daunce, some daunce and some play.

_Mus_. Anything to please you, noble Captaine.

_Suc_. Lively then, my hearts; some country Jigg or soe. Oh those playes that I have seene of youre, with their Jiggs[85] ith tayles of them[86] like your French forces! Death, I am a roging (roaring?) boy; but, come, stir your shanks nimbly or Ile hough ye. Strike up there!

[Daunce].

_Grimes_. Well don, my hearts; drinke, drinke.

_Suc_. Goe you in, Ile follow you.

_Om[nes]_. Come, Captaine.

_Suc_. Farewell, Steward.

_Mus_. Dee heare, Captaine?

_Suc_. With me, my fine treble knave? umh, thou dost tickle minikin as nimbly--

_Mus_. We hope your worship will consider our paines?

_Suc_. How, my fine knave? letts see, who were the dauncers?

_Mus_. Come forward there! nay, I told you he was ever bountifull: oh, good Captaine!

_Suc_. Let me see: I, thou art hart of vallor: thou didst daunce well, thou deservest--; I say no more: and who played?

_Mus_. We.

_Suc_. You? well sayd; you plaid and you daunc'd, you say good; let me see, halfe a peece or--

_Mus_. Blesse your Captaineship.

_Suc_. You plaid, you say, and you dauncd: umh, well, why then you that dauncd must pay those that plaid.

_Mus_. How, sir, how?

_Suc_. Ever, ever, whilst you live, _Jarvice_;[87] the dauncers always payes the musike. Wilt breake custome? No, or there a pawne for you.--Mr. Steward. Farewell.  _Exit_. 
_Mus_. This is your bountifull Captaine! a rope of his bounsigng! But stay, lets play to the steward; it may be when he wakes we may worke him to't.

_Omnes_. Content, content.  [Musike softe_.

_Lov_. Umh[88], play a healthe: soe; say, it shall goe rounde: goe to, I say and I sayt, it shall goe round. Umh, where is this fidle? in the ayre? I can perceave nothing. Where is my kinde friend and my fine companion? come, we will be friends again; goe to, we will. Umh, plaistered and bound up? bloody? how comes this? goe too and goe to; if I have done any mischiefe or bene over valiant in my drinke to kill a man or soe, why 'twas in my drinke, not I, and let my drinke be hangd for't; or, I say and I sayt, let um stay till I am drunke againe and then hange me; I care not, I shall not be sensible of it. Oh this sack! it makes a coward a _Hector_: the _Greekes_ and _Troians_ drinke no other; and that and a wench (for theres the divell out) made um cuffe ten yeares together, till at length when they had bled more than they coulde drinke they grew sober, the contented Cuckold tooke his wife home againe and all were good frends[89]. [Sease Musicke_] But stay, the musikes husht; I hope theyle appeare; I doe feale no such paine in my wounds that I had need of musicke to bring me to sleepe. Blesse me whose this? ha[90]!

_Enter Grimes disguised_.

_Grimes_. How does your worshipp? Mr. Steward, dee feele your selfe at ease? I am hartely sorry for your misfortune?

_Lov_. Misfortune? ha, what misfortune? now heaven and't be thy will--

_Grimes_. Pray heaven they be alive.

_Lov_. Ha, alive? in the name of drinke what have I don? where did you find me, ha?

_Grimes_. Why, sir, comming out--umh, umh--

_Lov_. Out with't, man.

_Grimes_. Out of a bad-house, sir.

_Lov_. A Bawdie house, I warrant.

_Grimes_. Yes sir.

_Lov_. Why, now its out.

_Grimes_. I, and tis well your worshipes out.

_Lov_. Noe, noe, it had bin better had I never gon in; but on, on.

_Grimes_. You were, sir,--as they say, sir--you had gotten a Cup to much.

_Lov_. Hang Cupps, my friend excepted; goe to; speake plaine; I was drunke was I?
_Grimes_. Yes, sir; you were not able to stand when you came out, sir?

_Lov_. Out of the Bawdy-house? I beleve thee; nay, I am a right
_Lovell. I, I look like a shotted herring now for't. _Jone's_ as good
as my lady in the darke wee me. I have no more Roe than a goose in me;
but on to the mischiefe, on.

_Grimes_. You beate the Bawd downe with the Chamber dore and bade her
keepe that for the Reckoning.

_Lov_. Umh, there was witt in my drinke, I perceive; on.

_Grimes_. Then, sir, you tooke up a Spitt.

_Lov_. A Spitt?

_Grimes_. Yes, sir, and broacht one of the wenches out.

_Lov_. How?

_Grimes_. Oh, sir, you made such a hole in her bakside[91] you might
have turnd--

[Blows his nose_.

_Lov_. What? thy nose int?

_Grimes_. Had I been there it had been at your service.

_Lov_. Thanke thee; thou shouldst have lost nothing by it.

_Grimes_. Then went Tobackoe pipes to wrack, and oh the black potts
sufferd without measure; nay, you swore (and for it paid your twelve
pence) that if you were maior youd come disguised on purpose to
confou[nd] 'um.

_Lov_. Ist possible I could doe this?

_Grimes_. This, sir? Why you kickd one flat-nosd wench that snuffled,
and swore she was a puritan.

_Lov_. Did not I pay for that oath too?

_Grimes_. No, sir; you bid the Constable keepe reckoning till it came to
a some and you would pay him in totall. So, sir, with the spit in your
hand away you runn, and we after yee, where you met with a roaring
Captain.

_Lov_. Ha, now, now comes the misfortune.

_Grimes_. Then you stopt and stood a while waving to and froe, as in
suspense; at length you fell, with a forward thrust, quite through his
heart.

_Lov_. Ha, through his heart? the Captaines dead then?

_Grimes_. No sir, twas through a silver heart he weares in memory of
his Mrs.

_Lov_. Ime glad of that: thou strukst me through the heart with thy
newes.

_Grimes_. You being downe, on fell the Captain like a tyrannicall
_Dutch_ man of war that shewes no mercy to the yeelding enemy, and ere
we could bring succor gave you these wounds, which being dark we brought
you home as privately as possible, sett you to sleepe and here stayd
till your waking.

_Lov_. Yare honest fellowes; goe to and go to, I say and I sait agen,
yare honest fellowes and shall not be unrewarded: looke you, theres for
you--and be but sylent in't.

_Grimes_. As is my instrument, Sir. Coods me! what, have they torne away
the back of your satteen Doublet? the Canvas is seene.

_Lov_. Umh, no, but they have stolne my velvet Jerkin.

_Grimes_. I, and dam'd your Dublet.

_Lov_. Tis well; goe; thanks; goe, Ile see you shortly; you and your
Companie shall play at my ladys wedding. I say no more, goe to; I love
you and I thanke you,

_Grimes_. I thanke you, good Mr. Steward. [_Discovers_

_Lov_. Whoes this? _Grimes_?

_Grimes_. Even he that has thus begrimd yee, my fine drunken Steward. I
can cure you, toe; come, let me be your Surgion.

_Lov_. Thou shalt be my hangman first, Rascall.

_Grimes_. You wonnot murder? helpe Captain, Mr. _Crackby, Tim_!

_Enter Omnes_.

_Omnes_. How now! how now! what's the matter?

_Lov_. Whoop! hell broke loose! tis good to shun the Divell.

/_Exit_.

_Grimes_. Not if you meet him in the likenes of a bottle of Sack, good
Steward.[92]

_Tim_. Why this is excellent.

_Suc_. Grimes, let me hugg thee, thou sonn of witt.

_Grimes_. Nay, letts not leave him thus.

_Crac_. Leade on, weele follow.

/_Exeunt Omnes_.

_Finis Actus Secundi_.
_Actus Tertius_.

(SCENE 1.)

_Enter Sir Geffry and Lady_.

_Sir Geff_. But I beseech you, Madam; what greater accession[93] can you wish then me for husband? I have it here thats sattisfaction for the lustiest widdow twixt this and London. Say, will you love me? Ime in hast and hate demurrs; if you refuse I must seeke out: I have a little moysture and would be loth to hav't dride for want of exercise.--What say you, lady?

_Lady_. Sir, for your love I thanke you; for your wealth I want it not; but yet I doe not find A disposicon in my selfe to marriage.

_Sir Geff_. That will not serve my turne; I am no knight Who weares the spurr of honour without Rowells To prick a woman forwards: I ride post To Marriage and resolve at the next stage To take my Inn up. You have here Two beautifull young gallants to your daughters: Since youle not be my wife yet be my mother; Ie marry any of them, which you please, And hood her with the bagg [badge?] of honor. Lady, What say you to this motion.

_Lady_. My daughters wills are not in my command: If you can purchase either of their hearts, My free consent shall follow.

_Sir Geff_. Nay, then, they will fall out for me, Madam, I am most fortunate in atcheiving virgins.

_Enter Bonville_.

Save you, sweet youth, the bewties of your Mrs. Crowne your desires. Are you a suiter?

_Bon_. Madam, I have occasions of importance Wishes a little privacy with you.

_Lady_. With me, sweet Mr. _Bonvill? Sir Geffrey_, Pray you vouchsafe your absence; at more leasure We shall discourse.

_Sir Geff_. With all my heart: Ile to the wenches. 

[Exit _.

_Bon_. Madam we are alone?

_Lady_. You did desire we should.

_Bon_. But are you sure none can oreheare us.

_Lady_. Unles we be to loud: What mooves you to require this secresie?
_Bon_. I come to aske a question, which the winds;
If I could deafe them, should not heare for feare
Their repercussive Eccho should declare it
To all our infamies.

_Lady_. What ist, I pray you?

_Bon_. Your daughter whom I was a servant to,
--I must deliver it in the homeliest phrase--
Is she dishonest?

_Lady_. You urge a repetition, gentle sir,
Of a sad truth: she is.

_Bon_. It cannot be
In reason comprehensible a mother
Should for a stranger blurr her daughters fame,
Were it untruth. I am confirm'd; this favor
Transcends requitall: if a man misled
By error against the diety, gross enough
For his damnation, owe a gratitude
To his converter, I am engag'd to you
For my delivery from her.

_Lady_. 'Twas no more
Then what my honor oblig'd me
And my respect to vertue, which in you
I should have murdred by my silence; but
I have not greife enough left to lament
The memory of her folly: I am growne
Barren of teares by weeping; but the spring
Is not yet quite exhausted.  [_Weeps_.

_Bon_. Keepe your teares
Lest the full clouds, ambitious that their drops
Should mix with yours, unteeme their big wombd laps
And rayse a suddeine deluge. Gratious madam,
The oftner you rehearse her losse the more
You intimate the gaine I have acquird
By your free bounty, which to me appeares
So farr transcending possibility
Of satisfaction that, unles you take
My selfe for payment, I can nere discharge
A debt so waytie.

_Lady_. Ist come to this?
You speake mysteriously; explaine your meaning.

_Bon_. To consecrate, with that devotion
That holy Hermits immolate[94] there prayers,
My selfe the adorer of your vertues.

_Lady_. Are you serious?

_Bon_. No scrupulous penitent, timerous that each thought
Should be a sinn, does to the priest lay ope
With halfe that verity his troubled soule
That I doe mine. I love you: in that word
Include all ceremony. No sooner had
Your information disingagd my heart
Of honoring your daughter, but amazd
At the immensnesse of the benefit
Your goodness had cast on me, I resolv'd
This way to show my gratitude.

_Lady_. But dare you,
Knowing the daughter vicious, entertaine
Affection to the mother?

_Bon_. Dare I when
I have bin long opresd with a disease,
Wish pleasing health? theres vertue enough here
To excite beleife in _Moores_ that only women
Have heavenly soules.

_Lady_. This is admirable:
Did my intention tend to love, as soone
I should embrace your motion in that kind
As any others, wert but to afford
Some small lustracon for the wrong my daughter
Intended you; nay, to confesse my thought,
I feele a strong propension in my selfe
To yeild to you; but I am loath,[95]--your youth
Will quickly loath me.

_Enter Y[oung] Marlowe and Thurston_.

_Mar_. Madam, this Gent[leman]
Desires to have you know him for your son:
Tis he my sister _Clariana_, with your licence,
Wishes for husband.

_Lady_. A proper Gent[leman]; Ime happy she has made
So iuditious an election.[96]
You are very welcome, sir: conduct him in, Sonn.

_Exeunt Young Marlowe and Thurston_.

_Bon_. Persuade me I can hate
Sleepe after tedious watching, or reiect
The wholesome ayre when I've bin long choakd up
With sicklie foggs: sooner shall--

_Lady_. Desist from protestations, or employ them
Mong those who have no more discretion
Then to beleive them.

_Bon_. How, Lady?

_Lady_. You can in Justice now no more appeach
Our mutabillities, since you have provd
So manifestly [in]constant.

_Bon_. These are arts
Orewhelme my dull capacity with horror:
Inconstant!
_Lady_. Are the light faines erected on the tops
Of lofty structures stedfast, which each wind
Rules with its motion? credulous man, I thought
My daughters real vertues had inspired thee
With so much confidence as not to loose
The estimation of her honor for
My bare assertion, without questioning
The time or any the least circumstance
That might confirm't. I did but this to try
Your constancy: farewell. _Exit_.

_Bon_. What witch had duld my sense
That such a stuped Lethurgie should sease
My intellectuall faculties they could not
Perceive this drift! If she be virtuous,
As no man but an heretick to truth
Would have imagind, how shall I excuse
My slanderous malice? my old fire renewes
And in an instant with its scortching flames
Burnes all suspicon up.

_Enter Belisea_.

_Bel_. Peace attend you.

_Bon_. What Cherubim has left the quire in heaven
And warbles peacefull Anthems to the earth?
It is her voyce, that to all eares speakes health,
Only to mine. Come charitable mist
Hide me, or freindly wherlewind rap me hence,
Or her next accent, like the thunderers, will
Strike me to dust.

_Bel_. Sir, I come not
With resolution (though my innocence
May justly arme [me]) to declare my truth;
For I am going where your slander cannot
(Had it bin greater) blast me. I desire
This for my past love, that youle retaine
Your wrong opinion to yourselfe, not labour
To possesse others with it, to disgrace
Our yet unspotted family.

_Bon_. If you want
A partner in your greife, take me along
That can teach you and all the world true Sorrow.

_Bel_. Twas not don well to brand my spotles name
With Infamy; but to deride me is
Inhumaine, when I only come to tell you
Ile send my prayers on charities white wings
To heaven for your prosperity.--You greive
For what? for your deliverance from a strumpet?

_Bon_. No, but that my raving fancy should direct
My trecherous tongue with that detested name
To afflict thy unblemishd purity, _Belisea_.
I do confes my error was an act
Soe grosse and heathnish that its very sight
Would have inforcd a Crocodile to weepe
Drops as sincere as does the timorous heart
When he ore heares the featherd arrow sing
His funerall Dirge.

_Bel_. Can this be possible?

_Bon_. No sismatick, reduc'd to the true faith,
Can more abhorre the Error he has left
Than I do mine. I do beleive thee chast
As the straight palme; as absolute from spots
As the immaculate Ermine, who does choose,
When he is hunted by the frozen _Russe_,
To meete the toyle ere he defile the white
Of his rich skin. What seas of teares will serve
To expiatt the scandall I have throwne
On holy Innocence?

_Bel_. Well, I forgive you;
But ere I seale your pardon I in[j]oyne
This as a pennance: you shall now declare
The author of your wrong report.

_Bon_. Your mother.

_Bel_. How! my mother?

_Bon_. No creature else
Could have inducd me to such a madness.

_Bel_. Defend me gracious virtue! is this man
Not desperate of remission, that without
Sense of compu[n]ction dares imagine lies
Soe horrible and godlesse? My disgrace
Was wrong sufficient to tempt mercie, yet
Cause twas my owne I pardond it; but this
Inferd toth piety of my guiltless mother
Stops all indulgence.

_Bon_. Will you not heare me out?

_Bel_. Your words will deafe me;
I doe renounce my affection to you; when
You can speake truth, protest you love agen.

[_Exit_.

_Bon_. Contempt repaid with scorne; tis my desert;
Poyson soone murders a love wounded heart.

[_Exit_.

(SCENE 2.)

_Enter Belisea, Clariana and Thorowgood_.

_Bel_. You may declare your will[97] here are no eares
But those I will not banish, were your busines
More secret.

_Tho_. Lady, I come to free
My worthy freind and your owne servant, _Bonvill_,
From an uniust suspition your conceite
Retaines of him. Your mother did employ me
In the unlucky message that pronouncd you
Empty of honor.

_Bel_. Has your worthles freind
Hird you to sweare this?

_Tho_. I'me none that live
By selling oathes.

_Bel_. Ile scarce believ't; he shall not
With all his cunning policie regaine
My good opinion of him. Sir, you cannot
Doe a more pleasing office then to leave me:
I do not love to heare of him.

_Tho_. Your pleasure rules me. [_Exit_.

_Cla_. _Belisea_, you did ill
Not to heare out the Gent[leman].

_Bel_. Prethe why?
His owne confession does appeach him one
In the conspiracy against my honor.
He sayes my mother was the originall
Of _Bonviles_ slander; and how impious
Twere for a child to thinke so, filiall duty
Instructs my knowlidge.

_Cla_. Be not confident;
Your piety may misleade you. Though your mother,
Shees passion like to us; we had it from her.
Ile say no more; the event will testifie
Whoes in the fault.[98]

_Enter Sucket and Crackby_.

_Suc_. Be not abashd; a little impudence is requisite;
Observe me, with what a garbe and gesture martiall
I will beseige their fortresses.

_Bel_. Who sent these fooles to trouble us?--Gent[leman],
We have some conference will admit no audience
Besides ourselves.
We must desire you to withdraw, or give us
Leave to do soe.

_Suc_. Men of warr are not soe easily put to a retreat; it suites not
with their repute.

_Cla_. Heele fight with us, sister: weed best procure him bound toth
peace.
_Crac_. Ladies, I must no more endure repulse; 
I come to be a suiter.

_Bel_. For what?

_Crac_. Why, that you would with Judgment overlooke 
This lovely countenance.

_Cla_. The hangman shall doe't sooner.

_Crac_. If you knew 
How many bewtious gentlewomen have sued 
To have my picture--

_Cla_. To hang at their beds head for a _memento mori_--

_Crac_. You would regard it with more curiosity. 
There was a merchants daughter the other day 
Runn mad at sight of itt.

_Cla_. It scared her from her witts: she thought the 
divell had haunted her.

_Suc_. Valour deserves regard, myne shall propugne 
Your bewty gainst all opposers.

_Bel_. Alasse! mine is so meane, 
None will contend with it, it needs no champions.

_Crac_. Contemne me not, lady; I am--

_Cla_. A most egregious asse.

_Crac_. Most nobly propagatted; my father was a man 
Well fu[mish'd] with white and yellow mettall.

_Cla_. I lay my life a Tinker.

_Crac_. And in his parish of account.

_Cla_. A Scavenger.

_Bel_. Is it a badge of your profession 
To be uncivell?

_Suc_. Uncivell! 
Noe; what is in other men uncivill 
In us is resolution; therefore yeild: 
I am invincible, flesh cannot stand 
Before me.

_Bel_. It must be drunke then.

_Cla_. I am not ith humour now 
To laugh, or else Ide not dismisse him yet. 
Good Mr. _Crackby_, does your wisdome thinke 
That I can love you?

_Crac_. My worth deserves it.
_Cla_. Well said, impudence.
Goe, get you home toth Cittie; goe solicitt
Some neighbors daughter; match with _Nan_ your Schoolefellow
With whome you usd to walk to _Pimblicoë_{99}
To eate plumbe cakes and creame,--one of your parish,
Good what-doe-you-lack.

_Crac_. This is offensive to
My reputation.

_Cla_. You shall heare more on't:
When thou art married, if the kind charity
Of other men permit thee to geet thee children
That call thy wife mother, bring them up
To people shoppes and cheat for 18d,
The pretious youth that fathers them.
Wanke, wanke, you and your Captaine _Huff_ to _London_,
And tell thy mother how thou has't sped i'th country,
And let her moane thee.

_Crac_. Captaine, we must give place; these girles are firebrands,
And we as straw before them.

_Suc_. They may stand
In neede of valour.

[Exeunt Suc. and Crac_.

_Enter Thurston_.

_Cla_. Have you oreheard us? these are the lads will do't,
When 20 such as you will be cast off.

_Thu_. Like a bob'd{100} Hawke.--Mrs, if I mistake not,
Your mother does inquiere for you.

_Bel_. I will attend her pleasure.  _Exit_.

_Cla_. Doe not goe, wench; we shall scarce be honest.

_Thu_. Love, is it time, after the services
I have perform'd, to have some salary?
Noe labourer works without his hier; I would
Be satisfied when you determine we
Shall end our hopes in marriage.

_Cla_. I have lookt for this month in my Calender
And find that marriage is prohibited.

_Thu_. It is not Lent nor Advent{101} if it were
The Court is not so strickt but 'twill dispense
With freinds, and graunt a licence.

_Cla_. Whole be bound
With you that theres no hindrance but we may
Be lawfully espoused?

_Thu_. Ime not so barren
Of freinds but I shall find security
For what will nere be question'd.

_Cla_. It may be soe; but one who calculated
My birth did warne me to abstaine from marriage
Til I was twenty.

_Thu_. You're no _Atlanta_; if you be, Ile play
_Hippomanes_ and over runn you.

_Cla_. You'd scarce catch me,
Though you had _Venus_ apples to seduce
My covetous eyes. Henceforth Ile have you leave
Your love to me.

_Thu_. I must leave to live then.
Why doe you say soe?

_Cla_. Cause it is [un]just
You should mispending affection on her
Who is incapable of it.

_Thu_. You'd faine wrest
A new expense of complement from me:
If you delight to heare your praise, Ile hire
Some mercenary [poet][102] to comend
In lofty verse your beauty.

_Cla_. You are merry:
My humor is not specious; we must know
A further distance.

_Thu_. Wherefore, pray?
Our eyes are no more poysenous then they were.

_Cla_. Yes, they infect reciprocally.

_Thu_. This language
Is not accustom'd; pray, tell me how
My presence is offensive, and Ile shun you[103]
As I would doe my fate. You are not serious:
My innocence assures me my deserts
Can chalenge no such usage.

_Cla_. Tis confest; but we
Are like thinne christall glasses that will crack
By touching one another: I conjure thee
By all our past love, from this parting minute
Nere to behold me more. I dare not venter
My frailty with thee.

_Thu_. What immodesty
Has my demeanor uttered you should doubt
Ravishing from me?

_Cla_. Thats not it, but cause
I would not tempt my destinie: thy sight
Would inflame marble, much more me whose heart
Is prompt enough to fly into thy breast
And leave mine empty. But 'tmust not remaine
In that lone habitation, least a curse,  
A fearefull one, sease on mee.

_Thu_. Can there be  
Curses more horrid, incident to earth  
For its past Sinns, then would depend on you  
For such a bold presumption as your breath  
Of faith would be.

_Cla_. Our tyrant fate has found  
Yet uninvented torments to expresse  
Our loyall soules. O, _Thurston_, thou wert never  
--Not when our mutuall freindships might have taught  
The constant turtles amity--more deare  
To me then now. I could, as well as then,  
Peruse love's dictats in thy amorous cheeks,  
Enjoy the pressure of thy modest lipp;  
But Ime enioynd by powerfull menaces  
T'infring my wonted use and to disclaime  
My vowes to thee.

_Thu_. If this be possible,  
What will become of earth? men will no more  
Respect Society or strive to save  
Humanity alive: henceforth theyle seeke  
For lost fidelity on Caves or topps  
Of untrodd Rocks, and plught their trothes to beasts;  
Commix with them and generate a race  
Of creatures, though less rationall, yet more  
Indude with truth. O _Clariana_, can  
There be a motive able to convert  
This pretious Christall temple, built for purity  
And goodnes adoration, to a faine  
For Idoll falshoods worship? But I cannot  
Labour my wandering Judgment to beleife  
Thou speakest thy meaning. If I have not lovd  
With that essential perfectnes thy worth  
That man could doe, in charity declare  
My Ignorant defect, and Ile amend it  
With more then zealous industry.

_Cla_. Tis vaine:  
You may as easily penetrate the cloudes  
With a soft whisper, as my eares, then which  
Noe thunders deafer. _Thurston_, tis not cause  
I have in the intemperate heate of blood  
Given up my soule to a new choyce, that breeds  
This soddaine mutability: I will  
Preserve my affection as inviolate to you  
As Anchorites their vowes, and in my grave  
Interr my virgin glory. Teares will not  
Permitt more conference: fare you well; Ile keepe  
My passion up till I have none to weepe.  _Exit_.

_Thu_. Shees gon! What vapor which the flattring sunn  
Exhales to heaven as to create a starr,  
Yet throwst, a fading meteor, to the earth,  
Has falne like me? Divinity, that tells  
Us there are soules in women, Ile no more
Credit thy dubious _Theorems_ nor thinke
Thy lawes astring us to preserve our faith.
Let the nice Casuists, that dispute each clause
Belongs to conscience with a[ll]ternate sense,
Dispense with breach of promise and prescribe
Equivocacons to evade all oathes
Without offending, or shees damnd.

_Enter Lovell_.

_Lov_. Well, Companion, at my friends Intreatie I am content to be
reconsyld; but have a care, goe to, ha, oh ho, youle[104] ... more; why,
go to then ... pledge the companion ... heeres to thee: what, what!

_Thu_. Heres one perchance will satisfie me.
Sir, your habit speaks yer understanding:
Please you resolve me one thing which disturbs
The quiet of my conscience.

_Lov_. Revenge may slumber but can never sleep:
He that lets slip an Injury thats done
Takes the next course to draw a greater on.

_Thu_. You counsell well. I pray, in all the volumes
Your learning has perusd, did you ere find
Any conclusion that allowd it lawfull
To breake an oath?

_Lov_. If she neglect and throw[105] disgrace on thee,
Fly't thou as much and be thy scorne as free.

_Thu_. An Oracle speakes in him; but, pray me
Ist lawfull then to breake an oath?

_Lov_. Though time prolongs, we cannot style it sloath:
My vowes are firme; hees damd that breaks an oath.

_Thu_. Good, good, agen: but the oath I treat on,
Is of another kind: tis to a woman.

_Lov_. It could not be her fault; there's a mistake in't.

_Thu_. None o'my life, theres none.

_Lov_. Let me see, let me see:
No, twas not hers, twas _Grimeses_ knavery.

_Thu_. Ha, whether did wild fancy lead my apprehension.
He minds me not but is in disputation
With his owne thoughts.

_Lov_. Wilt thou pledge me ii cuppes? Why, goe to and goe to, then.
Ha to thee, ha, sirra _Grimes_!
--When man gainst man conspire to doe evill,
For what Society is a fitt!

_Thu_. The Devill. [_Claps him on the shoulder_.

_Lov_. Oh helpe, helpe![106]   [_Exit_.}
_Enter Lady_.

_Lady_. I hope, sir, 
Noe occasion offerd in my house 
Breedes your distast; I should be sorry if 
It be soe, and conceal'd from me.

_Thu_. Your goodnes 
Is to nice ore me; lme exceeding well; 
Only some erring cogitations 
Trouble my braine a little.

_Lady_. Tis much pitty 
Distraction should have roome in you; I would 
Not for the love you beare my daughter, have you 
Be discont[ent]ed here.

_Thu_. And your daughter 
Repayes me kindly fort.

_Lady_. Surely her breeding 
Affords her better manners then to injure 
A gent[leman] of your deservings?

_Thu_. Alas, she has not: 
Twas but an unkindness triviall 
Mong freinds not worth the nameing.

_Lady_. It was to much 
Wert but an ill looke. If I may so far, 
Without immodesty, entreat the knowledge 
Of what it was Ile chide her for't. Pray, sir,-- 
We women are bold suitors; by your looke 
It is no meane perplexity her folly 
Has cast upon your temper,--pray, disclose it; 
And ift be anything the obedience 
She owes to me may countermand, she shall 
Repent her error.

_Thu_. Your humanity 
Would wrest a secret from me, though my life 
Consisted ith concealment: she has abolishd 
Her protestations to me, murdred vowes 
Which like the blood of Innocents will pull 
Cloudes of black vengeance on her, for no cause 
I can imagine but her humor; banishd 
Me her society and sight for ever.[107]

_Lady_. Tis above wonder: could I as well rule 
Her will as her exterior actions, 
She should not thus reject you; but I cannot 
Limit her mind, compell her to affect 
Against her liking. If perswations may 
Reduse her, Ile endeavour it.

_Thu_. Twilbe needles; 
I am resolv'd to meet her in revolt, 
Hug infidelity with as strong a faith
As she can possible; and if mans mallice
Can passe a womans, my dispight shall winne
Preheminence. I will inquire out one
By nature framd in scorne of bewty, and
In your perfidious daughters presence give her
That heart which she reiceted.

_Lady_. Twere pitty
Your passion should undoe you; you may find
Matches of noble quality: my daughter
In worth's inferior to you, yet I doubt not
But my perswasive oratorie may gaine you
Her forfeited affection.

_Thu_. Let her reserve it
For them who sue to inioy it; Ile conferr
My fancy on a Negro new reclaim'd
From prostitution; sacrifice my youth
To bedridd age, ere reinthrall my heart
To her insulting bewty.

_Lady_. Twould be a maime to your discretion
To abjure a certaine and a pleasing good
For an uncertaine harme you would impose
In malice on another. Yo'are a man
In whome the glorious soule of goodnes moves
With such a spacious posture that no woman,
But such a squemish baby as my daughter,
Would be most fortunate to enrich their choyse
With one so much deserving.

_Thu_. He experience
Your affirmation: could you love me?

_Lady_. What
I spoake was a contingent supposition
What others might doe, but not argument
I meant to love you.

_Thu_. But I know you will;
I see a pleasing augury in your looks
Presages mercy; and those eyes, whose lustre
The light (that scornes privation) cannot equall,
Darts beames of comfort on me.

_Lady_. Twould be rare
Could you perswade me to't, I can find
No such propension in my selfe; beware
Least in this wildnes you ingage your heart
To one cannot accept it.

_Thun_. Pish!
I'me sure you will: humanity forbids
Refusall of my affection, which shall be
As constant as inseparable heate
To elementall fire.--I'me soddaine, lady,
In my resolve, but firme as fate.

_Lady_. Surely,
You are not well.

_Thu_. You are deceivd; I am Exceeding well yett; all my faculties Retaine their wonted motion; but I me like A new recoverd patient, whose relapse Admits no helpe of phisick: in your love Consists my hope, futurity of health; And you have too much charity to suffer Perdition overwhelme me.

_Lady_. Your confidence Workes much uppon my lenity; but twould Occasion scandall; every one would judge I did supplant my daughter, should I yeild To your desines.

_Thu_. Let the censorious world Fright those with harelipd Calumnie whose guilt Merrits detraction; your pure innocence No feind dares vitiatt.

_Lady_. You have prevaild.

_Thu_. Ile take you at your word, a holy kisse Shall seale the contract. _kisse_. Avaunt! stand of! she has poysond me, her lips Are sault as sulpher, and her breath infects, Noe scorpions like it.

_Lady_. What ayles you, Sir?

_Thu_. Ha, ha, ha! Those who imagine such prodigious mischiefes Should be more cunning then to be ore reacht By puissne[108] cosnage; Have you no more judgement Then to beleive I lov’d you.

_Lady_. Doe you not love me then?

_Thu_. Can a man Rob’d of a Jewell deare to him as breath Affect the theife, O murdresse?--for that title Best suites thy impious quality, since thy curse, Thy cruell curse, imposd uppon my love, Has massacred two of the faithfulst hearts Affection ere united. Though your lust Desir’d smooth youth to sate it, piety Might have reclamd you for attempting me, Your daughter’s interest.--Ile not rayle Cause tis unman[ner]ly,[109] untill you find What ‘tis to cause true lovers prove unkind. _Exit_.

_Enter Alexan_.

_Lady_. Was I a sleepe? What transitory dreame Deceivd my sense? did I not here my love Protest affection? no, it was some feind
Vested in his mortality, whome hell
Sent to abuse my weaknes.

_Lov_. She has bin sure tormented with that furie which cla[pt] me on my shoulder. She talkes of Hell, love and affection. Ha, goe to and goe to! the old Knight my Mrs. Goast, I hope does not haunt the house.

_Lady_. Twas he, Ime certaine on't; I felt his lips,
And they were flesh; they breath'd on mine a warmth
Temperate as westerne kisses which the morne
Weaps liquid drops to purchase. This confirmes
It was no apparition that contemnd
My willingnes, but he, his reall selfe,
Mockt my integrity: he must not passe soe,
To blase abroad my infamy.

_Lov_. Madam, feare nothing, be not troubled; the Goast meant no harme to you, uppon my life he did not; Goe to and goe to, I say and I sayt, he did not. He did appeare to me--your love, your husband, my old Mr.--here, clapt me on the shoulder, as his old custome was still when he usd to talke with me familiarly.

_Lady_. But, Sirrah, what familiarity
Have you with any of my privasies?
Sausie groome, practise your ancient duty.

_Enter Young Mar_.

_Y. M_. What meanes this fury, Madam?

_Lady_. O, deare boy,
What haplesse fate exposd thee to the veiw
Of this [sic] sad mothers sorrowes? but I charge thee,
As thou respects thy duty, not to question
The cause of my distemper; my iust feares
Prohibits thee the knowledge of it.

_Lov_. Why, Sir, she has seene the Divell.

_Lady_. Ha!

_Lov_. Nay, Madam, I have don; they say the Divell has no power ore a Drunkard; once more Ile run the hazard.

_Y. M_. Whoe, what is he? speake,
For heavens sake, speake: were he defensd with clouds
Or circled with unsteadfast boggs, my rage
Should cut a passage to him.

_Lady_. Thou strait will grow
More passionate then I: goe to your chamber,
Ile but dispatch these gentlemen.

_Exit Mar_.


_Sir Gef_. O here she is.--Lady, I and my Nephew, being your good neighbors and of the worshipfull, I of the Country, he of the Cittie, have long desird a match with your daughters, but they are coy, so
childish, so unmannerly; I know not how to terme them: they dispise who worship offers them, they may hereafter doe worse and have worse, madam.

_Crac_. My uncle tells your ladiship the truth:
We are noe peasants or unhonorable
To be affronted with indignities.

_Suc_. Here are men that has seen service.

_Bunch_. At a mustring or ith Artillery garden.

_Lady_. 'Twas past my pleasure, good Sir _Geffery_, you have had such harch entertainement from them: henceforth Ile lay my charge upon them to be more tractable.--Mr. _Alexander_, goe call my daughters hither.

_Lov_. She turnes againe.--I shall with all celerity wish them to approach.  

_Sir Gef_. Certainly, Madam, I can see no cause Wherefore at first you might not, without putting My Knighthood to this trouble, have matched with me Your selfe; it had been somewhat fitter.

_Enter Belisea and Clariana_.

_Bel_. Are these fools here?

_Lady_. Minions you might have expresd more kindnes In your behaviour to these Gentlemen
Whom my strict caire provided for your husbands.

_Bel_. I hope they cannot blame us, we have used them With that respect our modesties allowd.

_Lady_. Your peevish nicenes settle your affections To a more fayre demeaner towards their worth, Or you shall seeke a Mother and a portion.

_Crac_. Nay, if you take away their portions, Ile Meddle no further with them.

_Lady_. You both heare
My not to be revoaked intention
Respect this knight and his nephew in the way
Of marriage, or I shall take another order with you.

_[Exit_.

_Cla_. Was it you, good knight of the ill favord Countenance, Who procurd us these loving admonitions?

_Sir Gef_. Nay, and you begin agen, Ile call your Ladie Mother.

_Suc_. I do protest unto you, beauteous Lady,
You do not cast a favorable aspect.

_Bel_. I am no Plannet.

_Crac_. Captaine, you doe me palpable affront:
She is the election of my understanding.

_Sir Geff._ Retort not so abstrusly.--Will you disdain
the good of honour, condiscend to me
And youthfull write me, lady, in your stile,
And to each thread of thy sun-daseling hair
Ile hang a pearle as orient as the gemmes
The eastern Queenes doe boast of. When thou walk[st],
The country lasses, crownd with gorgeous flow[res],
Shall fill each path and dance their rural jigs
In honour of this bewty.

_Cla_. Hey day, where did you borrow this? Sir, youle beg[one]: I feel
the fitt a coming; I shall rayle instantly.

_Crac_. Baffeld before my Mrs? Death to fame! Captaine, good Captaine.

_Suc_. Pish, I doe but drill her
For you, friend; you shall have her, say your Captaine
Sayes it, whose words doe ventilate destruction
To all who do oppugn what they designe.

_Sir Gef_. Come, you shall love me.

_Cla_. I cannot choose: goe, get you home, antiquity; thinke [of]
heaven, say thy prayers often for thy old sinns and let [thy] maid diett
thee with warme broathes least some cold appoplexis sease thee before
thou art prepard.

_Sir Gef_. Madam! madam! shees in her old fitt!

_Cla_. Call her, I care not if she heare me, I councell better than your
physician: every night drinke a good cup of muscadine,[113]--you will
not have moysture left to ingender spitle to cleanse thy mouth ith
morning. Goe, set thy feath[er] right, good mooncalfe[114]: you have
your answere.

_Sir Gef_, Contemne an old man and his feather, _Bunch_,
Ile begon, _B[unch]_.

[_Exeunt Sir Gef. and Bunch_.

_Cla_. Will you goe?--Sister, I have shakd mine off.
What stayes this nifie[115] for?

_Crac_. Nay, call me what you will, she is my prise,
And I will keepe her.--Captaine, to her Captaine.

_Suc_. You must not part thus, Mrs; here are men
Has scapd--

_Cla_. The Gallowes.

_Suc_. Ile rigg you up; although you were a Carack
I shall find tackling for you.

_Bel_. You are uncivill; pray, desist.

_Crac_. Not kisse a gentleman? a pretty ring this same:
I have a mind to it and I must have it.

_Bel_. You will not robb me of it?

_Suc_. I will intreate this glove which shall adorne
In fight my burgonett.

_Cla_. Some honest hostesse
Ere this has made a chamber pot of it.

_Crac_. It is some rivalls ring and I will have it
To weare in spight of him.

_Bel_. Helpe, Sister, helpe.

_Enter Bonvill and Grimes_.

_Bon_. She shall not neede. It is my ring the villaine desires soe
importunatly: what untuterd slave art thou that darst inforce aught
from this gentlewoman.

_Crac_. Whats that to you? you might have come before me.

_Bel_. What would you have don?

_Crac_. Entreated you againe to have come behind me.

_Bel_. O, my _Bonvill_, so happy a benefit no hand but thine could have
administred. Thou save[d]st the Jewell I esteeme next to my honour,--the
Ring thou gavest me.

_Crac_. Nay, if you have more right to her than I, takt I pray you:--
would I were off with a faire broken pate.

_Suc_. Is your life hatefull to you?

_Bon_. Why doe you inquire, good puff past?

_Suc_. My blade
Is of the _Bilbo_[116] mettle; at its splendor
My foes does vanish.

_Bon_. Ile try that presently;--feare nothing, ladys.

_Suc_. Death! now I thinke out, I did breake my blade this morning on
foure that did waylay me: Ile goe fetch another, and then I am for you.

_Crac_. Take myne, Captaine.

_Suc_. Hold your peace, be wise: that fellow
In the blew garment has a countenance
Presages losse of limme if we encounter.--
Ile meet you presently.

_Bon_. It shall not serve your turne yet: Ile not blunt
My sword upon such stock fish. _Grimes_, bestow
Thy timber on them.

_Grimes_. Come, sir.  __beats them__.
_Suc_. Take me without a weapon? this cudgell sure
Is Crabb tree, it tasts so sourely.

_Exeunt_.

_Bel_. Oh, my Deare _Bonvill_.

_Bon_. Mistrisse, I sent an advocate to plead
My guiltless cause: you, too[117] severe a Judge
Forbad him audience; I am therefore come
Once more to prove my innocence.

_Cla_. Come, without Ceremony
Forgive you her and she shall pardon you
Most willingly.

_Bon_. Can you have soe much mercy,
You soe much goodnes?

_Bel_. Noe soule long tir'd with famine, whom kind death
Has new enfranchisd from the loathed flesh,
With happier expedition enters heaven
Then mine thy bosome, _Bonvill_. Let our loves,
Like plants that by their cutting downe shoot up,
Straiter and taller flourish: we are now
Inseperable.

_Cla_. Your good fates, though I
Repine not at them, makes my unhappy fortunes
Appeare farr more disastrous.

_Bon_. Whats thy misfortune?

_Bel_. Alas, my mother has crost her in her affection as she did us.

_Bon_. She shall
Crosse ours no more. _Belisia_, if youle
Be ruld by me you shall away with me;
None but you sister shall be privy to it,
And sheele keepe Council.

_Bel_. Ile goe any whither
To enjoy thy presence; theres no heaven without it.

_Bon_. You shalbe advertisd where she remaines,
And certifie us how your mother takes it:
When we are married we shall live to thanke you.

_Cla_. Will you leave me, then?

_Bel_. Prethee, poore heart, lament not; we shall meet,
And all these stormes blowe over.

_Cla_. Your tempests past; mine now begins to rise
But Ile allay its violence with my eyes.

_Exeunt omnes_. 
_Actus Quartus_.

SCENE 1.

_Enter Magdalen, Timothy and Alexander_.

_Ma_. Run, good sweet _Timothy_; search the barnes, the stables, while I looke in the Chambers. Should she be lost or come to any harme my lady will hang us all. Why dost not fly?

_Tim_. Hey day, if her feet walke as fast as thy tongue, sh[e]s far enough ere this time. What a stir you make! Were you, as shee is, with your sweet heart, you would [be] pursud, would you? You would be hangd as soone. Al[as], good gentlewoman, heaven speed her!

_Ma_. You will not goe then?

_Tim_. No, indeed, will I not. Her mother may be angry if she please. The time has bin she would as willingly Bin at the sport her selfe as now her daughter. The ge[ntleman] shees gon with is a man, And see theres no harme d[one], I warrant you.

_Lov_. Ha, ha, gramercy, _Timothy_, thou hittst it right. _Maudlin_, goe to; should _Tim_ here offer as much to you, ha, I beleave you would not lock your selfe up in my ladyes closett; goe to, and goe to.

[Exeunt_.

_Ma_. Udsme, my lady!

_Enter Lady_.

_Lady_. Lost, past redemption! I pursue a fier Which like the giddy Meteors that seduce With their false light benighted travellers Allures me to distruction. To curse fate Were to allow I feard it, and admit Participation in me of that spiritt I most detest, a womans.

_Lov_. Please your good Ladyship.

_Lady_. Yes, that you depart.-- [Exit Alexander_.
What can he see in her more worthy love Then is in me? shees but a picture drawne By my dimensions, and men sooner fancy The Substance then the Shaddow. Oh, but shee Is the true image not of what I am But what I was, when like the spring I wore My virgin roses on my cheeks.

_Lov_. Madam, you seeme--

_Lady_. Angry at your impertinency; learne manners, leave me.
_Lov_. She has coniur’d downe my spirit: these are immodest devills that make modest laddyes become strikers[118]. Ile out oth storme, take shelter in the cellar. Goe to and goe to; tis better venter quarriling mongst those hogesheads.

_[Exit Alexander_.

_[Enter Maudlin [and Timothy.]

_Ma_. Madam, your daughter--

_Lady_. Where is she? Who? _Clariana_?

_Ma_. The faire _Belisea_.

_[Enter Clariana_.

_Cla_. Did you call me, madam.

_Lady_. Noe: were you soe neere? begon aga因e,--
Yet stay.--_Maudlin_, avoid the Roome, and if you see Mr. _Thurston_, entreat him hithe. _Timothy_,
Find out my son and charge him to delay The execution of my late comand Till I next speake with him.  

_Exeunt Mag. and Tim_.

_Cla_. you did what I comanded?

_Cla_. Yes, on my Soule.

_Lady_. But thou art ignorant
Why with such violence I inioyn[e]d thee
To leave thy _Thurstons_ love?

_Cla_. Were I not sure
Theres nought in him that can be titled ill,
I should have thought your circumspective Judgment
Had spide some error in him, and in care
Of me your child forbidden me his love.
But whatsoer’s the cause, though your comand
Was like perdition welcome, my obedience
Fullfild it truly, without questioning
The reason why or the unlimited power
Of you my mother.

_Lady_. You did very well.

Now thou shalt know the reason, which before
I doe relate, afford me leave to weepe,
To save thy teares, which at the hearing of it
Will, like the dew on lillies, pearle thy cheeves.
I have beheld thee with a Rivalls eye
In _Thurstons_ love; my penetrable heart,
Like a moist cloud, has opened and receivd
Loves fine bolt into it. Now thou knowst it,
Methinks I see confusion in thy lookes
Prepard to blast me.

_Cla_. Heaven forbid it I
Should ere conceive the meanest thought of ill
Of you, my parent. Since you love him, here
To heaven and you I give my interest up
And would I could as well command his heart
As he might mine, believe me you should then
Affect you with as true and dear a zeal
As ever I did him: I should be happy
In making you so.

Lady. Charitable girl,
Forgive thy cruel mother, who must yet
Impose a stronger penance on thy duty:
Thou must go to thy Thurston, and obtain his love.

Cla. A little labour will serve for that.

Lady. Not for thyself but for thy hapless mother,
Who am, without it, nothing. Woe him for me,
Use the enchanting musicke of thy voice
On my behalf, who, though thy rival, yet
Remember I’m thy mother; nor canst thou
Consign thy breath to a more holy use
(Though thou shouldst spend it in religious prayers)
Then to redeem thy parent. Weep for me,
And in requital for each drop thou shedst
I’ll pay to heaven a Hecatombe of tears
For thy success. But take good heed, dear child,
While thou art weeping, thou dost not disclose
That face of thine; for, were he mine by vow,
Loves powerful Retoricke uttered [in?] thine eyes
Would win from me.

Enter Thurston and Thorowgood.

Cla. Here comes the Gentleman.

Lady. Be earnest, Clariana, I shall hear you.

[Exit.

Tho. Sir, you must justify this.

Thu. Fear it not; yonder she goes; I’ll tell her of it, sheelee not deny it.

Cla. Mr. Thurston, whether do you walk so fast?

Thu. O, Clariana, are you there?

Cla. Nay, stay, I have a suit to you.

Thu. I would
Be loth to offend your eyes; when we last met
You charged me never to behold you more.

Cla. I did indeed, but on mature advice
I have reclaimed that imposition.
You shall behold me daily, talke with me,
Doe all the acts that love with Innocence
Can suffer, if youe but overrule your will
To graunt me one request.
_Thu_. You wrong my faith
In questioning my graunt of any thing
You can desire wert to undoe my selfe
Or combate miseries as yet unheard of,
You[r] least breath may expose me to them.

_Cla_. Nay, in this there is no danger; if there be
A real happines on earth, this way
You shall arrive to it.

_Tho_. He were unwise
Would he not graunt it then.

_Thu_. Please you declare it.

_Cla_. There is a lady,
Of such a perfect virtue, grace and sweetnes,
That Nature was to all our sex beside
A niggard, only bountiful to her;
One whose harmonious beawitie may intitule
All hearts its captive: yet she doats on you
With such a masculine fancy that to love her
Is duty in you.

_Thu_. It is herselfe, Ime sure.

_Tho_. It surely is no other.

_Cla_. No, tis one
So far transcending me, that were a sinne
Should I deprive you, the most perfect man,
Of her, the perfectest woman. She will weep
Even at your name; breath miriads of sighes;
Wring her hands thus; demonstrate all the signes
Of a distracted lover; that in pity,
Though I did love you well, I have transferd
My right to her, and charge you by all ties
That you affect her with the same true zeal
Purer and better.

_Tho_. This is the strangest madness I ere heard of.

_Thu_. Is it you, _Clariana_, that speake all this?

_Cla_. You know and heare it is.

_Tho_. But I doe scarce
Credit my hearing, or conceive I am
Mortall, for surely, had I bin, your words
Like the decree of heaven had struck me dead.
What strong temptation lay you on my faith!
O, _Clariana_, let me but decline
Passion, and tell you seriously that this
Is cruel in you, first to scorne my love,
Next to admitt a scruple of beleif,
Though you can be perfidious to your selfe,
That I can be soe. Noe; since you are lost,
Ile like the solitary turtle mourne
Cause I must live without you. But, pray, tell me
What is she you would have me love?

_Cla_. My Mother.

_Thu_. Ha, your Mother!

_Tho_. Ist possible, lady? you much doe wrong
Your innocence in laboring to enforce
That upon him which is my interest. Heaven
Smild at the contract twixt us; quiers of Saints
Receivd our mutuall vowes, and though your Mother
May in her passion seeme to have forgott
Her pretious faith, yet when I shall awake
Her sleeping reason with the memory
Of that has past betwixt us, my strong hope
Tells me I shall induce her to the sphare
Which she has movd from.

_Cla_. Would heaven you could! How coldly in this cause
Doe I perswade! when I would speake, my heart
Checks its bold orator, my tongue, and tells it
Tis traitorous to its Mr.--Noble Sir,  
I doe conceit you infinitly good,
So pittifull that mercy is in you
Even naturally superlative, (forgive me,
If I offend) you doe in this transgresse
Humanity, to let a lady love you
Without requitall. But I must professe
To heaven and you, that here Ile fix to earth,
Weepe till I am a statue, but Ile gaine
Your pitie for her: pray consider ont.

_Thu_. Consider ont? wonder has soe engrossd
To its wild use all corners of my heart
That there remains scarce one poore concave left
To hold consideration. I must either
Love her I hate or see her whome I love
Wilfully perish. See, shee kneels and weeps,
Prays as she meant to expiate all the sinns
Earth ere committed. One of those pure drops
Does (as my lives blood in a soddaine trance)
Surround my heart. You have prevaild, arise:
At your request I will performe an act,
Which may no story hold least all who love
Hereafter curse the president,—Ile love her.
That deathfull word comes from my torturd soule
As a consent doth from a timorous maid
For an enforcing ravisher.

_Tho_. You are not mad, sir? what doe you meane?

_Cla_. I thanke you.
But love her dearely,  _Thurston_, sheele deserv't:
I doe remember, when my Father livd,
How he would praise her goodnes. Think on me
As one that lovd you well, but neer like her;
And, if you please, bestow each day a kisse
Uppon her in my memory. Soe, farewell.--
Sorrows flow high: one griefe succeed another;
I die in piety to redeeme my Mother.  _Exit_.

_Tho_. But, harke you, sir, do you intend to love her.

_Thu_. Good sir, torment me not.

_Enter Grimes_.

_Grimes_. By your leave, gentlemen: good Mr. 
_Thorowgood_, a word or two in private.

_Thu_. Compeld to love my enemy! what man,
That had but so much spiritt as a mule,
Could suffer this! Lay nice prescriptions,
Ambiguous bookmen, on submissive slaves;
Affright with terror of a wilfull death
Those whom black murders of inhumane sin
Has living damnd; Ime yet in my owne heart
White as a babe, as Innocent as light
From any mortall guilt; and were my soule
Drawn fro this mew[119] of flesh twould quickly streatch
Like a swift Falkon her aspiring wings
And soare at heaven. Nature instructs us Death
Is due to all: how can't be then a Sinn
To die, or he more guilty of offense
That kills himselfe or [than?] he who in his bed
Some shivoring ague murders? Ime resolv'd;
Ile rather chuse to immolate my life
In Martirdome to virtue then reserve't
Till it be staind with mischiefes.

_Enter Lady_.

_Lady_. How doe you, sir?

_Thu_. Oh, oh, my head, my head!
Stand further of, good nightcrow: if thou comst
As a presaging harbinger of death,
Howlt in thy direfulst and most horrid notes,
And [t] will be wellcome as choyse musick to me
And Ile adore thee fort, with teares of ioy
Make thy black feathers white.

_Lady_. Good sir, mistake me not, I am your friend.

_Thu_. I cry you mercy, lady; you are shee
Whom I had vowd to love;--a wild conceite
Had seasd my fancy. Pardon me, I must
Proclaim to heaven and to the world a truth
Which I should study to forget: you are
A Creature so suparlatively bad
That, were the earth as absolute from sinn
As in its first creation, youre sole crimes
Would pull a curse upon it. I should tell you
The specialties wherein you're foule, but dare not
Breath in the same ayre with you; I begin
To feel infection:--fare you well.  _Exit_.

Lady. Contemnd againe! deprive me of the name
And soule of woman! render me a scorne
To the most base of our revengefull sex!
If I beare this while there be knives or swords,
Poyson or ought left to extinguish life
That womans spleene can compasse--

Enter Alexander._!

Goe to my sonn; inioyne him by all rights
Of naturall duty to accomplish that
Which in youre hearing I comanded him.
Beare him this Jewell and this gold, that when
Tis don he may escape; be carefull,
As you expect my favour.

Alex._! I shall inculcate your desires unto him.
--Her favour! goe to, theres comfort.

Exit._

Enter Thorowgood._

Tho._ Madam, theres one brings a sad message to you.

Lady._ From whome, I pray you.

Tho._ From two friends of yours
Your cruelty has murdred,

Lady._ My cruelty
Never extended to that horrid height,
Not to my foes. Who are they?

Tho._ Your daughter,
The innocent _Belisia_, and my friend,
Her worthy suiter, _Bonvill_.

Lady._ Your freind and my daughter dead and by my meanes!
This cannot be; my daughters sure in the house.
Good sir, unfould this ridle, it begetts
Wonder and terror in me.

Tho._ Madam, you know with what a cruel messuage
You sent me to my friend, which provd as false
As your faire daughter virtuous. Why you did it
I will not question, nor upbraid you with
This violation of your faith.

Lady._ This story
Conduces nothing to the deathes you talkd of.

Tho._ Yes, since then
A iust mistrust that you would crosse their match
Causd them last night privatly to steale hence
With an intention to have reacht the house
Where _Bonvills_ mother lives; but see the fates
How they dispose of men! crossing the River
That runns beneath your orchard, and ith darke,
Their headstrong horses missing the ford overthrew them
And, which I cannot without true griefe utter,
There drownd them both.
Was it not soe, _Grimes_?

_ Grimes _. Tis too sad a truth; and I,
After all meanes to save their life was past,
Lookd to my owne and got the shore: their bodies
I feare the violence of the tide has carried
Into the Sea by this time.

_Lady_. Enough, good friend; no more.
Had a rude _Scythian_, ignorant of teares,
Unlesse the wind enforcd them from his eyes,
Heard this relation, sure he would have wept;
And yet I cannot. I have lost all sense
Of pitty with my womanhood, and now
That once essentiall Mistress of my soule,
Warne charity, no more inflames my brest
Than does the glowewormes ineffectual fire
The ha[n]d that touches it. Good sir, desist
The agravation of your sad report;  
_Weepe_
Ive to much greife already.

_Tho_. It becomes you:
You do appeare more glorious in these t[ears]
Then the red morne when she adornes her cheeks
With _Nabathean_ pears: in such a posture
Stand _Phaetons_ sisters when they doe distill
Their much prisd amber. Madam, but resume
Your banishd reason to you, and consider
How many Iliads of preposterous mischeife
From your intemperate breach of faith to me
Fetch their loathed essence; thinke but on the love,
The holy love I bore you, that we two
--Had you bin constant--might have taught the wor[ld]
Affections primitive purenes; when, from
Your abrogation of it, Bonvills death,
Your daughter[s] losse have luc[k]lessly insu'd.
The streme that, like a Crocodile, did weep
Ore them whom with an over ravenous kisse
Its moyst lips stifled, will record your fault
In watery characters as lastingly
As iff twere cut in marble. Heaven, forgive you;
Ile pray for you; repent.

_Exeunt Thorowgood and Grimes_.

_Grimes_. O, my deare Master!

_Lady_. Repent! should I but spend
The weakest accent of my breath in sighes
Or vaine compunction, I should feare I sinnd
Against my will, then which I doe confes
Noe other diety. Passions[120] doe surround
My intellectual powers; only my heart,
Like to a Rocky Island, does advance
Above the foming violence of the waves
Its unmovd head, bids me my fate outdare.
Ills sure prevention is a swift despaire.

_EXIT_.

([SCENE] 2.)

_ENTER Alexander and Young Marlowe_.

_Alex_. Thinke, sir, to whome the Injury was don,--go to--your Lady
Mother, a vertuous lady, I say and I sayt agen, a very vertuous lady.
Had I but youth and strength as you have, in what cause should I sooner
hazard both then in this?

_Y. M_. Murder, my friend!

_Alex_. Noe, tis doing sacrifice to slaundert goodnes.

_Y. M_. Rob my beloved Sister of a husband!

_Alex_. Yes, to redeeme to your mother her lost honour.

_Y. M_. Art not a Divell?

_Alex_. Ha!

_Y. M_. Thy breath has blasted me.

_Alex_. I must confes indeed I have eaten garlick.

_Y. M_. All pious thoughts that lately fild this spheare
Are scatterd with the winds that issu'd from thee,
Which, like the infectious yawning of a hill,
Belching forth death inevitable,
Has distroyd freindship and nature in me.
Thou canst not poysion worse: I can feed now,
Feed and nere burst with mallice. Sing, Syren, sing
And swell me with revenge sweet as the straines
Falls from the _Thrasian_ lyre; charme each sence
With musick of Revenge, let Innocence
In softest tunes like the expiring Swann
Dy singing her owne Epitaph.

_Alex_. What meane you, sir? are you mad? goe to and goe to; you doe not
use me well; I say and I say, you do not. Have I this for my love to you
and your good Mother? Why, I might be your Father by my age, which is
falne on me in my old Mrs service; he would have used me better.

_Y. M_. Dost weepe, old Crocodile? looke dost see this sword.

_Alex_. Oh, I beseech you, sir; goe to; what meane you?

_Y. M_. No harme to thee; this was my Fathers once,
My honord Father; this did never view
The glaring Sunn but in a noble cause,
And then returnd home blushing with red spoyles,
Which sung his fame and conquest. Goe, intreat
My Mother be as pleasant as she was
That night my Father got me. I am going, say,
Most cheerfully to finish her commaund.

_Alex_. Heaven prosper you. Ha!

_Enter Thurston_.

_Thu_. Freind, I was looking for you.

_Y. M_. And you have found me, Villaine.

_Thu_. What meane you?

_Y. M_. If thou darst follow me I will conduct thee
Unto the seate of death.

_Thu_. Dare! Ile goe with thee, hand in hand; goe on.

_[Exeunt ambo_.

_Alex_. Goe, goe to and goe to, I say and I sait; here wilbe some
revenge. If the Gent[leman] fall my lady has promist me a farme of
100 pounds a yeare; goe to, then. Now, if her sonn be slayne, heres
then this purse of gold and this rich Jewell which she sent to him.
By this wee see, whoever has the worst,
The fox fares well, but better when hees curst.[121]
Goe to and goe to then.

_[Exit_.

_Acut Quintus_.

(SCENE 1.)

_Enter Lady Marlowe sola_.

_Lady_. Twas[122] here about; these are the poplars, this
The yewe he named. How prettily thees trees
Bow, as each meatn to Consecrate a branch
To the drownd lovers! and, methinks, the streame
Pitt[y]ing their herse should want all funerall rights,
Snatches the virgin lillies from his bankes
To strow their watry sepulcher. Who would
Desire an easier wafting to their death
Then through this River? what a pleasing sound
Its liquid fingers, harping on the stones,
Yeilds to th'admiring eare!

_Enter Thorowgood, Clariana, and Magdalen_.

_Mag_. This way she went, Ime sure. She has deliv[er]d
So many strang distractions that I feare
Sheele act some wilfull violence on her selfe
If we prevent it not.

_Cla_. Yonder is somebody among the Trees
Hard by the River: alas, tis shee!

_Tho_. Come softly; if she heare our footing, her dispaire
May anticipate our diligence.

_Lady_. Tempt me not, frailty: I disdaine revolt
From ought the awfull violence of my will
Has once determind. Dost thou tremble, flesh?
Ile cure thy ague instantly: I shall,
Like some insatiate drunkard of the age,
But take a cup to much and next day sleepe
An hower more then ordinary.

_Tho_. Heaven and good Angells guard you!

_Cla_. My deare Mother!

_Mag_. My gratious Lady!

_Lady_. What inhumaine creatures
Are you that rob me of the priviledge
Of wellcome death, which I will run to meet
Spight of your malice!

_Tho_. Oh decline those thoughts;
Let not the lucid tapers of your soule,
Bright grace and reason, fondly be extinct.
Essential virtue, whether art thou fled,
To what unknowne place? wert thou hid mongst ro[cks]
Or horid grots where comfortable light
Hates to dispence its luster, yet my search
Should find thee out, reduce thee to this brest
Once thy lovd Paradice. Pray, madam, pray:
From those faire eyes one penetentiall teare
If they have power to intercede for earth
To beg for mercy for you.

_Lady_. These are toyes
Forgd to delude mortality: let me die
And afterwards my uncontroled Ghost
Shall visitt you. I only goe and aske
How my _Belisia_ does enjoy her health
Since she exchanged her native ayre of earth
For those dull regions. If I find the clime
Does to our constitutions promise life,
Ile come to you and in those happy shades
Will live in peace eternally.

[[125] _Cla_. Alas,
I feare shees Irrecoverable. Twas
Ill don to affright her thus.

_Mag_. Expect the best:
The Gentleman will perswade her.
Tho. O, dispaire,
Grimme homicide of soules, how thou involvst
More haplesse creatures in distracted Ills
Ore [w]home thou triumpest; but Ile fright thee hence:
No feind shall add a trophy to thy acts
For victory over her.] Deare madam, heare me:
You had a noble husband, while he livd;
And I beleive
That no perswasion cold have forc'd you yeild
To vitiation of his honor'd bed,
Not with a prince. And will you give your soule,
Which heaven in its creation had designd
A bride to faire eternity of blisse,
By vild procurement of hells bawd, despaire,
To prostitution of unnaturall death
And then of woes erelasting which admit
Noe diminution? Can you heare this, Madam,
And does the flintie substance of your heart
Not thaw, like to a hill of Russian Ice
When fires applid to't? Yes, your eyes demonstrate
It[126] melts already.

_Cla_. Deare Mother, please you walke
Into your Chamber: here the wind is cold
And may disease your weaknes.

_Mag_. Here is your vayle, and't please your ladiship.

_Lady_. Let me alone, you trouble me; I feele
A soddaine change; each organ of my soule
Suffers a strong vicissitude; and, though
I do detest a voluntary death,
My Conscience tells me that it is most iust
That the cursed author of such impious ills
Ought not to live.

_Tho_. O thinke not soe: those words
Retaine affinity with that passion
I hop'd youd left. The greatest of your Sinns
Mercy will smile at, when you doe implore
Its unconsuming grace: the dullest cloud
Will, when you pray, be active as the ayre
In opening to receive that breath to heaven
Thats spent to purge your ills. Why, you may live
To make a faire lustration for your faults
And die a happie Convert.

_[Ho]low within_: Follow, follow, follow! that way he went.

_Enter Young Marlowe, Alexander, [Consta]ble and [office]rs_.

_Y. M_. Hell, I will flie no farther; since my hand
Is guilt in murder it shall sacrifice
Some of my apprehenders.

_Tho_.Whats the matter?
Deare Sir, what ayles you?

_Lady_. O my Sonne! I feare.
_Alex_. Stand back, goe to; what meanes this rudenes.
I say goe to, keepe back.

_Con_. Sir, we must enter: here he is. I charge you
Asist us to lay hold on him.

_Lady_. Why, how now,
Fellowes? what makes you presse in here thus rudely?
Whom do you follow?

_Con_. Madam, I me sorry my authority
Enforces me to doe it: your sonn iust now
Has slaine one Mr. _Thurstone_, and the law
Commaunds us apprehend him.

_Y. M_. Here take my sword:
When I but doe waigh the iustnes of the cause
For which I suffer, though I could escape,
My Conscience would forbid me. Come, Ile goe
Whither you please.

_Lady_. Stay, officers; all accessaries are
As liable to punishment for murder
As those who act it. I confesse twas I
Enforcd my son to slay that gentleman.
Your warrant extends to take me with him.

_Tho_. Alas, beleive her not; greife for her sonne
Has made her frantick.

_Lady_. By heaven tis truth!
If you refuse to execute your office
I shall confesse my act unto the Judg
And soe condemne you of partiality.
My Sonn knowes this is truth.

_Y. M_. I must acknowledge
Mr. _Alexander_ oft did instigate me
To kill him.

_Con_. Sir, you must clere your selfe of this.

_Alex_. Who? I? Goe, take the babe from its Mothers teat and taxe him
with this crime. I accessary to a murder! goe to.

_Con_. Why, and goe to, sir, and avoid resistance;
You must goe. Will your ladiship walke with us?

_Lady_. Yes, most willingly.
I doe this most abhorrid life despise
Since tis to iustice a iust sacrifice.

__Exeunt omnes__.

(SCENE 2.)
A Table: Enter Judge, Sir Geffery, Crackbie, Suckett, and Bunch.

_Sir Hu_. I doe admire this accident: since I have sat Judge I have not knowne any such tryall.

_Sir Gef_. Tis certaine, sir; but looke you, sir, Ile tell you. You do perceive me sir: as Ime a gentleman I lov'd the lady; but she, out of her pride, I thinke, or else I were to blame to say soe, scornd me. Marke you that, sir? understand you that?

_Sir Hu_. You question my understanding very much, good Sir _Geffrey_. But pray you, sir, being here more conversant then I, could you informe me how this quarrell grew twixt her [and Mr.] _Thurston_?

_Sir Gef_. Yes, yes, I can;--but let me see, I have almost forgott; to say truth, I never heard the reason, but as the wisest guess--hum, hum--he should have had her daughter.

_Crac_. I might have had her my self, you know, uncle.

_Sir Gef_. Peace, Nephew, peace, give Justice leave to speake.--As I related, the reason I related, Sir, was as I told you.

_Sir Hu_. You told me nothing yet, Sir _Geffery_.

_Sir Gef_. Noe? did I not say he should have had her daughter?

_Sir Hu_. You did; but what does that conduce to their dissention?

_Sir Gef_. Oh sir, the originall efficient cause,--you understand me? for suspition whispers he had given her a foule blow and would have left her.

_Crac_. Nay, by my birthright, uncle, the child was not his alone, for I dare sweare I had a hand at least in it. I did endevor fort, did I not, Captaine?

_Suc_. Yes, there are others to as well as you; yes, she has struck her top sayle to a man of warr; she has bin boarded, sir, I can assure you.

_Sir Hu_. What impudent slaves are these!--But are you sure the gentlewoman is with child?

_Sir Gef_. Sure? doe you question it, Sir? _Bunch_, be ready, _Bunch_, to write their confessions quickly.

_Bunch_. They are not come yet to confession, sir.

_Sir Gef_. Noe matter for that, _Bunch_; with the Judges leave weele here their confession before they come, that we may know the better to state the cause when they doe come. Ist not best, thinke you?

_Sir Hu_. Who shall speake for them, thinke you?

_Sir Gef_. No matter whether any man speake nor noe: we know he killed
the man, and she comanded him, ergo they are guilty; ergoe that must be
their confession, scilicet that they are guilty. Write this, _Bunch_,
and then we will perpend, as law and Judgment guides us, whether we will
save or condemne. How say you, sir?

_Crac_. Oh well don, uncle! I knew[128] he would prove what he said,
otherwise I would have venturd a sillogisme in Baraly[p]ton to have made
it evident.

_[Suc_._[129] But with your favour, gentlemen; suppose he did unlive
_Thurston_ in faire duell?

_Sir Hu_. No duell can be fayre, cause tis against
The kingdomes lawes.

_Suc_. The kingdomes lawes! how shall
A Gent[leman] that has a blemish cast
Upon his life, faire reputac[io]n,
Have satisfaction then? allow no duells!
Hel! a man of armes had better live in woods
And combate wolves then among such milke sops.
The kingdomes lawes!

_Crac_. Patience, good Captaine; we will have duells lawful.

_Suc_. Tis fit they should, being legitimacy managd, sir.]

_Enter Constable and Prisoners_.

_Sir Gef_. O, soe; are you come? weele tickle you ifaith.

_Con_. Soe please you, heare are the prisoners.

_Sir Hu_. Tis well, we have waited them. Madam,
I should have bin more fortunate to have scene you
In any place but this; and here,
In any other cause then this, I would use you
As the precedent carridge of your life
Has merited, but cannot: y'are a prisoner
Convict of murder, a most hideous crime
Gainst law and nature.

_Sir Gef_. Yes, marry is it, and that she shall find ere we have don.
_Bunch_, read their indictments, _Bunch_. She had as good have married
me, I warrant her.

_Sir Hu_. Good Sir _Geffrey_, silence a while. Who is the accuser?

_Con_. Here.

_Sir Hu_. What have you, freind, to object against this lady?

_Con_. That she confesd it was by her procurement and comaunde her sonn
murderd young _Thurston_.

_Lady_. Please you, sir, that a poore prisoner may entreate one favour.

_Sir Gef_. Yes, you shall have favour!
_Sir Hu_. Any thing mercy can graunt unpreiudiciaall to Iustice.

_Lady_. Then this:
You shall not need to produce witnesses
Or charge a lury to designe me guilty
Of _Thurstons_ murder. I confess it to you,
Twas only I that slew him.

_Sir Gef_. Marke that, Sir: shee that slew him! do you hear?

_Sir Hu_. Pray disturbe her not.--How comes it then, Madam, to be
affirmd your Sonn did kill him?

_Sir Gef_. I, lets heare that, how it comes: well remembred, you did
even speake before me.

_Crac_. O how learnedly could I speake now, might I have licence!

_Lady_. Pray, Sir,
Let me not be oppresd with noyse; my cause
Beares not so slender waight. For my owne life,
So many reasons forfeit it to death
That `twere a Sinn, had I a will to live,
To plead to save it; but for this my sonn
I do beseech a hearing.

_Sir Hu_. Speake freely, lady.

_Lady_. Thus then:
Suppose the wrested rigor of your lawes
Uniusly sentenc'd any here to death,
And you enforce on some unwilling man
The present execution of your act,
You will not after cause the instrument
Of your decree, as guilty of his blood,
To suffer as a Homicide: how then
Can your impartiall Judgment
Censure my sonn for this which was my fact?

_THurston_ the malice of my will wishd dead:
My instigation and severe comaund
Compeld him to atcheiv't, and you will graunt
Noe princes lawes retaine more active force
To ingage a subiect to performe their hests
Then natures does astring a devoutious child
To obey his parent.

_Sir Gef_. Pish, all this is nothing: there is a flat statute against
it,--let me see,--in Anno vigessimo tricessimo, Henerio octavo be it
enacted,--what followes, _Bunch_?

_Sir Hu_. Nay, good Sir, peace--
Madam, these are but wild evasions
For times protraction; for your paritie,
It cannot hold; since Nature does enforce
Noe child to obey his parent in an act
That is not good and iust.

_Lady_. Why, this seemd both
To his obedience; but relinquish that
And come to Conscience: does it not comande
In its strict Canons to exact no more
Then blood for blood, unlesse you doe extort
Worse then an usurer. For _Thurstons_ life
I offer myne, which if it be to meane
To appease your Justice, let it satisfie
Your mercie. Spare my Sonn and I shall goe
As willingly to death as to my rest
After a painfull child birthe. Looke on him!
How fit the subiect is to invite your pittie!
What Tyrant hand would cut this Cedar up
Ere its full groath (at which it stately head
Would give a shade to heaven), or pluck this Rose
As yet scarce blossomed?

_Sir Gef_. Hum, what says _Bunch_?

_Lady_. Mercy wilbe proud
T'infold him gently in her Ivory armes,
And, as she walkes along with him, each word
He speakes sheele greedily catch at with a kisse
From his soft lipps such as the amorous Fawnes
Enforce on the light Satyrs. Let[130] me dy
Who, like the palme, when consious that tis void
Of fruite and moysture, prostratly doe begg
A Charitable headsman.

_Sir Hu_. So bad a cause
Deserves not to be pleaded thus. Deere madam,
Greife overwhelmes me for you, that your guilt
Has damp'd the eyes of mercy and undone
All intercession. Please you desist:
We must proceed to th'examination
Of the other prisoners.--
_Sir _Geffrey_, we shall need your grave assistance:
_Sir _Geffrey_, be more attentive.

_Sir Gef_. Tis very necessary. I wilbe sworne she did bewitch me; I
thinke I was almost asleepe. But now to yee, I faith; come on, what can
you say that Judgment shall not passe against you?

_Tho_. Sir, you are the Judge here?

_Sir Hu_. Yes, sir, why question you my power?

_Tho_. Noe, scarlett man, I question thy wit,
At least thy Humanity and the Conscience
That dares imagine to destroy this wealth,
To hang this matchless diamond in the eare
Of _Ethiope_ Death. Send him to file thy house,
Strike with his dart thy Children and thy selfe,
Gray bearded miscreant, whose best acts compard
With _Thurstons_ murder (cause this lady did [it])
Are full iniquity.

[_Suc_.[131] The man speaks home and boldly.]

_Sir Hu_. Sir, you are fitter for a Jayle, a Bedlam,
Then to stand free before us.
What? art thou mad, man?

_Sir Gef_. Yes, what are you, Sir. I aske to, though I know you well enough. What are you?

_Tho_. I am one, To expresse my selfe in my true character, Soe full of civill reason and iust truth That to deny my owne peculiar act I should esteeme as base and black a sinne As Scythians doe adultery: twas I That gave this lady councell to invade That Thurstons life, and out of cowardise, Feareing my person, set this bold young man To be his murderer. Ime the principall, The very source from whence this brooke of bloode Fetches its spring.

_Sir Hu_. Still more of the conspiracy! Sir, what say You to these designements?

_Suc_. Say, sir, you slew the man in equall duell: Twill bring you off, I warrant you.

_Sir Gef_. Answere, you youth of valour, you that dare See men of credit bleede. Ha!

_Y. M_. Sir, I am to dy, and should I now speake false Twould be a maine addicon to the ill What I alone comitted: for this man, Howsoere his fury does transport his tongue, Hees guiltlesse on't: I must confess my Mother Did, for some private wrong which he had don, Wish me to call him to account; but this Steward did with all violence sollicit That I should slay him.

_Alex_. Whoe? I? goe to; ist come to this?

_Sir Hu_. Sir, you must answer this.

_Sir Gef_. Marke how the mischeife lookes.

_Alex_. I doe defie thy mallice, thou falce Judge. Goe to; my [Mrs.] I appeal to, she that knowes my vertue and Integrity.

_Sir Hu_. Away with him toth Jayle: a publique Sessions may [ere] long from thence deliver him to the gallowes.

_Const_. Come, Sir.

[_Exeunt Const, and Alex_.

_Sir Hu_. Madam, for you and for your Sonn, your crimes Being soe manifest, I wish you would Prepare your selves for heaven. Meantime you must remaine Saffe prisioners untill the Judges sitt, Who best may give a sentence on your fact.

_Tho_. And what for me?
"Sir Gef_. I, what for him, Mr Justice?

"Sir Hu_. Sure your words
Rather proceed from some distraction
Then from similitude of truth. You may
Begun, we do quitt you.

"Tho_. And I'll quit myself
Of what you will not, [of] my hated life.
You have condemned a lady who may claime
As many slaves to wait on her in death
As the most superstitious _Indian_ prince
(That carries servants to attend in grave)
Can by's prerogative; nor shall she want
Waiters, while you and I, my reverend Judge,
Are within reach of one another.

[Offers at the Record_.

"Suc_. Death, Sir!
Dare you presume to draw before us men
Of stout performance?

"Sir Gef_. You sir, we'll have you hang'd, sir, with the Steward.

"Sir Hu_. We doe forgive him; twas his passion.
'Tis manly to forbear such infirmities
In noble souls.
Away with the delinquents, officers![133]

"Sir Gef_.[134] I charge you looke to them: there is
some rescue intended, I warrant you.

"Con_. Sir, yonder are some six or seven without,
Attired like Masquers, that will not be denied
Admittance.

"Sir Hu_. What are they?

"Con_. [Faith[135]] we know not,
Nor will they tell us, only this they say:
Heareing of the lady _Marlowe's_ condemnation,
They are come
With shew of death to make her more prepar'd for.

"Sir Hu_. We will deny none of her freinds to see her;
They can intend no rescue.

"Con_. Noe, my life ont, sir: they come unarm'd.

"Sir Hu_. Be still; let's see this misterie.

_Florish, Horrid Musike. Enter Death, Gri., and Furies_.

_Gri_. If in charnel houses, Caves,
Horrid grots and mossie graves,
Where the mandraks hideous howles
Welcome bodies void of soules,
My power extends, why may not I
Hugg those who are condemned to dy?
Grimme _Dispaire_, arise and bring
_Horror_ with thee and the king
Of our dull regions; bid the rest
Of your Society be addrest,
As they fear the frown of chance,
To grace this presence with a dance.

_Reconders. Enter Hymen and the Lovers_.

_Tim_. _Death_, avaunt! thou hast no power;
This is _Hymen_'s happy howr.
Away to the dark shades! hence!
And, grim _Dispaire_, let _Innocence_
Triumph, and bring everlasting peace
To all your souls and joys increase.
Smile, smile, sweet air, on us that come
To sing _Death_'s Epicedium.
Extract from roses gentlest winds,
Such odors as young _Hymen_ finds
At sweet _Arabian_ nuptials; let
The youthfull graces here beget
Soe smooth a peace that every breath
May bless this marriage of _Death_.
Fear nothing, lady, whose bright eye
Sing'd _Death_'s winges as he flew by:
Wee therefore, trust me, only come
To sing _Death_'s Epicedium. [discover].

_Tim_. Stay, stay, by your leave Mr. Justice.--
Madam, your servant _Timothy_ brings you newes
You must not dye. Know you this Gentleman?

_Sir Gef_. Now, on my knighthood, Mr. _Thurston_.

_Lady_. Amazement leave me: is he living?

_Sir Hu_. Are we deluded?

_Tim_. So it appeares, Sir: the gent[leman] never had hurt; hees here,
and let him speake for himselfe and this gentlewoman his wife.

_Lady_. Who? _Clariana_?

_Thu_. With your leave, reverend father.--To you, Madam,
Whome I must now call Mother, first your pardon
That the conceivd report of my faind death
Has brought you to this trial: next
For this your daughter and your sonn, whose virtues
Redeemd [me] from the death your rage had thought
I should have suffered, he agreeing with me
Consented to appeach himselfe of that
He nere intended, and procured this man
As his accuser of my murder, which
Was but contrivd to let you see the error
Of your sterner malice; that, acquainted with
The foulenesse of the fact, by the effect
You might repent it and bestow your blessing
On us your Suppliant Children.
_Cla_. Which we beg
With hearty sorrow, if we have transgressed
Our duty to you.

_Sir Hu_. I am happy to see so blest a period.

_Sir Gef_. Ha, ha, widdow, are you come of thus, widdow? You may thank me: I hope you'll have me now, widdow.

_Lady_. This sudden comfort,
Had I not yet a relique left of grief,
Would like a violent torrent overbear
The banks of my mortality. Oh, _Thurston_,
Whom I respect with a more sacred love
Then was my former; take my blessing with her
And all the wishes that a joyfull mother
Can to a child devote: had my _Belisia_
And her deare _Bonvill_ livd, this happy day
Should have beheld a double wedding.

[_Suc_.[137] Death, must he have her then?]

_Sir Hu_. Spoke like a mother.

_Tho_. Madam,
The surplusage of love that's in my breast
Must needs have vent in gratulation
Of your full joys. Would you mind your promise,
And make me fortunate in your love!

_Lady_. Sir, I have vowed,
Since by my means my daughter and her love
Perishd unhappily, to seclude my selfe
From mans Society.

[_Bonvil, Belisia, and Grimes discover_.

_Tho_. Weele cancel
That obligation quickly.--Lady, I now
Will urge your promise: twas a plot betwixt us
To give them out for drownd, least your pursuit
Should have impeachd their marriage, which is now
Most jystly consummate; and[138] only I
Remaine at your devotion for a wife.

_Lady_. Take her,
And with me a repentance as profound
As Anchorites for their sin pay.

_Sir Hu_. Madam, how blest am I
To see you thus past hope recovered,
My mirth at your faire wedding shall demonstrate.

_Sir Gef_. I will daunce too, that[s] certain, though
I breake my legs or get the tissick.

[_Suc_.[139] Doe you know me, Sir?
"Bon_. Yes, very well, sir.
"Suc_. You are married, sir.
"Bon_. I, what of that?
"Suc_. Nothing, but send you Joy, sir?"

"Lady_. But where's my Steward? hees not hangd I hope: This mirth admits no Tragedy.
"Gri_. Behold the figure.
"Alex_. I crave forgivenesse.
"Lady_. Goe to, you have it.
"Alex_. Thanke you, madam,--I, I will goe to and goe to, and there be ere a wench to be got for love or money, rath[er] then plot murder: tis the sweeter sinn of [the two]; besides, theres noe danger of ones cragg; [the] worst is but stand in one sheet for ly[ing] in two: and therefore goe to and goe to, I [say] and I sayt agen.

"Sir Gef_. _Bunch_ take my cloake, _Bunch_; it shal [not] be sed, so many weddings and nere a Da[nce]: for soe many good turnes the hangman ha done you, theres one for all, hey!

"Tho_. Well said, Sir _Geffrey_.

"Sir Gef_. Hey, when I was young! but come, we loose [time]: every one his lasse, and stricke up Musick!

"Daunce_.

"Lady_. Now, gentlemen, my thanks to all, and since [I]t is my good hap to escape these ills, Go in with me and celebrate this feast With choyse solemnitie; where our discourse Shall merrily forgett these harmes, and prove Theres no Arraingment like to that of love.

[Exeunt omnes_.

FINIS.

"This Play, call'd the Lady Moth[er] (the Reformacons observ'd) may be acted. October the xvth_, 1635.

WILL. BLAGRAVE, _Dept. to the [Master] of the Revell[s]_.

INTRODUCTION TO THE TRAGEDY OF SIR JOHN VAN OLDEN BARNAVELT.
I have never met anywhere with the slightest allusion to this fine historical play, now for the first time printed from a MS. [140] in the British Museum (Add. MS. 18,653). It is curious that it should have been left to the present editor to call attention to a piece of such extraordinary interest; for I have no hesitation in predicting that Barnavelt's Tragedy, for its splendid command of fiery dramatic rhetoric, will rank among the masterpieces of English dramatic literature.

On a first rapid inspection I assumed, with most uncritical recklessness, that Chapman was the author. There are not wanting points of general resemblance between Chapman's Byron and the imperious, unbending spirit of the great Advocate as he is here represented; but in diction and versification, the present tragedy is wholly different from any work of Chapman's. When I came to transcribe the piece, I soon became convinced that it was to a great extent the production of Fletcher. There can, I think, be no reasonable doubt about the authorship of such lines as the following:

"_Barnavelt_. My noble Lords, what is't appeares upon me
So ougly strange you start and fly my companie?
What plague sore have ye spide, what taynt in honour,
What ill howre in my life so cleere deserving
That rancks in this below your fellowships?
For which of all my cares, of all my watches,
My services (too many and too mightie
To find rewards) am I thus recompenced,
Not lookd on, not saluted, left forgotten
Like one that came to petition to your honours--
Over the shoulder slighted?

_Bredero_. Mounsieur _Barnavelt_,
I am sorry that a man of your great wisdom
And those rare parts that make ye lov'd and honourd,
In every Princes Court highly esteemd of,
Should loose so much in point of good and vertue
Now in the time you ought to fix your faith fast,
The credit of your age, carelessly loose it,--
dare not say ambitiously,--that your best friends
And those that ever thought on your example
Dare not with comon safetie now salute ye" (iii. 1).

Such a verse as,--

"In every Princes Court highly esteemd of,"

or,--

"Now in the time you ought to fix your faith fast,"

can belong only to Fletcher. The swelling, accumulative character of the eloquence is another proof; for Fletcher's effects are gained not by a few sharp strokes, but by constant iteration, each succeeding line strengthening the preceding until at last we are fronted by a column of very formidable strength. Let us take another extract from the same scene:--
"Barnavelt. When I am a Sychophant
And a base gleaner from an others favour,
As all you are that halt upon his crutches,--
Shame take that smoothness and that sleeke subjection!
I am myself, as great in good as he is,
As much a master of my Countries fortunes,
And one to whom (since I am forc'd to speak it,
Since mine own tongue must be my Advocate)
This blinded State that plaies at boa-peep with us,
This wanton State that's weary of hir lovers
And cryes out 'Give me younger still and fresher'!
Is bound and so far bound: I found hir naked,
Floung out a dores and starvd, no friends to pitty hir,
The marks of all hir miseries upon hir,
An orphan State that no eye smild upon:
And then how carefully I undertooke hir,
How tenderly and lovingly I noursd hir!
But now she is fatt and faire againe and I foold,
A new love in hir armes, my doatings scornd at.
And I must sue to him! be witnes, heaven,
If this poore life were forfeyt to his mercy,
At such a rate I hold a scornd subjection
I would not give a penney to redeeme it.
I have liv'd ever free, onely depended
Upon the honestie of my faire Actions,
Nor am I now to studdy how to die soe."

The whole scene is singularly fine and impressive; it shows us Fletcher
at his highest.

But in other passages we find a second hand at work. In the second scene
of the third act there is far less exuberance of language and a
different style of versification, as may be seen in the following
lines:--

"Orange. My grave Lords,
That it hath byn my happines to take in,
And with so little blood, so many Townes
That were falne off, is a large recompence
For all my travell; and I would advise
That (since all now sing the sweet tunes of Concord,
No Sword unsheathd, the meanes to hurt cut off
And all their stings pluckd out that would have usd them
Against the publique peace) we should end here
And not with labour search for that which will
Afflict us when 'tis found. Something I know
That I could wish I nere had understood,
Which yet if I should speake, as the respect
And duty that I owe my Country bids me,
It wilbe thought 'tis rather privat spleene
Then pious zeale. But that is not the hazard
Which I would shun: I rather feare the men
We must offend in this, being great, rich, wise,
Sided with strong friends, trusted with the guard
Of places most important, will bring forth
Rather new births of tumult, should they be
Calld to their Triall, then appease disorder
In their just punishment; and in doing Justice
On three or four that are delinquents, loose
So many thousand innocents that stand firme
And faithfull patriots. Let us leave them therefore
To the scourge of their owne consciences; perhaps
Th'assurance that they are yet undiscoverd,
Because not cyted to their answere, will
So work with them hereafter to doe well
That we shall joy we sought no farther in it."

Here we have vigorous writing, staid and grave and unimpassioned, and a more regular metre. In determining questions of authorship I have so often found myself (and others, too) at fault, that I shrink from adopting the dictatorial tone assumed in these matters by learned Germans and a few English scholars. But I think in the present instance we may speak with tolerable certainty. Before my mind had been made up, my good friend, Mr. Fleay, pronounced strongly in favour of Massinger. He is, I think, right; in fact, it is beyond the shadow of a doubt that Massinger wrote the speech quoted above. In all Massinger's work there is admirable ease and dignity; if his words are seldom bathed in tears or steeped in fire, yet he never writes beneath his subject. He had a rare command of an excellent work-a-day dramatic style, clear, vigorous, free from conceit and affectation. But he is apt to grow didactic, and tax the reader's patience; and there is often a want of coherence in his sentences, which amble down the page in a series of loosely-linked clauses. I will not examine scene by scene in detail; for I must frankly confess that I feel myself sometimes at a loss to determine whether a particular passage is by Fletcher or Massinger. Most of the impassioned parts belong, I think, to the former. I would credit Massinger with the admirably conducted trial-scene in the fourth act; but the concluding scene of the play, where Barnavelt is led to execution, I would ascribe, without hesitation, to Fletcher. In the scene (v. 1) where the French ambassador pleads for Barnavelt we recognise Massinger's accustomed temperance and dignity. To the graver writer, too, we must set down Leydenberg's solemn and pathetic soliloquy (iii. 6), when by a voluntary death he is seeking to make amends for his inconstancy and escape from the toils of his persecutors.

There is no difficulty in fixing the date of the present play. Barneveld was executed on May 13, 1619, and the play must have been written immediately afterwards, when all Christendom was ringing with the news of the execution. In the third scene of the first act there is a marginal note signed "G.B." The initials are unquestionably those of Sir George Buc, Master of the Revels from 1610 to 1622.[141] On comparing the note with an autograph letter[142] of Sir George's I find the hand-writing to correspond exactly. The date, therefore, cannot be later than 1622, but the probability is that the play was produced at Michaelmas, 1619.

In our own day the great Advocate's fame, which had been allowed to fall into neglect, has been revived with splendour by Mr. Motley, whose "Life of John of Barneveld" is a monument _aere perennius_ of loving labour, masterful grasp, and rare eloquence. Had the dramatists been in possession of a tithe of the facts brought to light from mouldering state documents by the historian, they would have regarded Barneveld's faults with a milder eye, and shown more unqualified praise for his great and noble qualities. But they are to be commended in that they saw partially through the mists of popular error and prejudice; that they refused to accept a caricature portrait, and proclaimed in unmistakable accents the nobility of the fallen Advocate. Perhaps it is not so strange that this tragedy dropped from sight. Its representation
certainly could not have been pleasing to King James; for that murderous, slobbering, detestable villain had been untiring in his efforts to bring about Barneveld's ruin.

Throughout the play there are marks of close political observation. To discover the materials from which the playwrights worked up their solid and elaborate tragedy would require a more extensive investigation than I care to undertake. An account of Barneveld's trial, defence, and execution may be found in the following tracts:

((Greek: alpha)) "Barnavel's Apologie, or Holland's Mysteria: with marginall Castigations, 1618." The Apology, originally written in Dutch, had been translated into Latin, and thence into English. The Castigations, by "Robert Houlderus, Minister of the Word of God," are remarkable, even in the annals of theological controversy, for gross blackguardism. After indulging in the most loathsome displays of foul brutality, this "Minister of the Word of God" ends with the cheerful prayer:--"That they whom Thou hast predestinated to salvation may alwayes have the upper hand and triumph in the certainty of their salvation: but they whom Thou has created unto confusion, and as vessels of Thy just wrath, may tumble and be thrust headlong thither whereto from all eternitie Thou didst predestinate them, even before they had done any good or evil."

((Greek: beta)) "Newes out of Holland: concerning Barnavelt and his fellow-Prisoners, their Conspiracy against their Native Country with the enemies thereof: The Oration and Propositions made in their behalfe unto the Generall States of the United Provinces at the Hage, by the Ambassadours of the French King," &c., 1619.

((Greek: gamma)) "The Arraignment of John Van Olden Barnavelt, late Advocate of Holland and West Freisland. Containing the articles alleadged against him and the reasons of his execution," &c., 1619.

*       *       *       *       *

"This magnificent play is mainly the production of Fletcher and Massinger: it must have been written between May, 1619, and May, 1622, for the King's company acting at Blackfriars. T[homas] Hol[combe] acted a woman's part in it: so did G. Lowin, perhaps a son of John Lowin, unless indeed G. is a miswriting for J., as sometimes happens. It is singular that one has no knowledge whatever of Thomas Holcombe, except as an actor in Fletcher's plays: although so many of the lists of the king's men of that date have come down to us. Mr. Gough who took the part of Leidenberg, is Robert Gough, not Alexander: the latter acted only in Charles I.'s time. Another actor, Michael, is unknown: probably a super."--F.G. FLEAY.

Since the above paragraph was written, I have found in the MS. the names of three more actors, Jo[hn] Rice, Bir[ch], and T[homas] Po[llard]. The following note, for which I am indebted to Mr. Fleay, will be read with interest:--"It is noticeable that a play called the Jeweller of Amsterdam or the Hague, by John Fletcher, Nathaniel Field, and Phillip Massinger, was entered on the Stationers' Books 8th April, 1654, but not printed. This play must have been written between 1617 and 1619, while Field was connected with the King's company, and undoubtedly referred to the murder of John Van Wely, the Jeweller of Amsterdam, by John of Paris, the confidential groom of Prince Maurice, in 1619. It is _prima facie_ likely that the same authors would be employed on both plays.
Field, Daborne, Dekker and Fletcher are the only authors known to have written in conjunction with Massinger; and Dekker and Daborne are out of the question for that company at that date. We are now enabled to fix the date of the 'Fatal Dowry,' by Field and Massinger, as c. 1618.

THE TRAGEDY OF SIR JOHN VAN OLDEN BARNAVELT.

Sir John Van Olden Barnavelt.

_Actus Primus_.

SCAENA PRIMA.

_Enter Barnavelt, Modes-bargen, Leidenberck, and Grotius_.

_Bar_. The Prince of _Orange_ now, all names are lost els! That hees alone the Father of his Cuntrie! Said you not so?

_Leid_. I speake the peoples Language.

_Bar_. That to his arme and sword the Provinces owe Their flourishing peace? that hees the armyes soule By which it moves to victorie?

_Mod_. So 'tis said, Sir.

_Leid_. Nay, more; that without him dispaire and ruyn Had ceazd on all and buried quick our safeties.

_Gro_. That had not he in act betterd our counsailes And in his execution set them off, All we designd had ben but as a tale Forgot as soone as told.

_Leid_. And with such zeale This is deliverd that the Prince beleeves it; For Greatnes, in her owne worth confident, Doth never waigh but with a covetous hand His lightest meritts, and who add to the scale Seldom offend.

_Gro_. 'Tis this that swells his pride Beyond those lymitts his late modestie Ever observd. This makes him count the Soldier As his owne creature, and to arrogate All prosperous proceedings to himself; Detracts from you and all men, you scarce holding The second place.
_Bar_. When I gave him the first:
I rob'd myself, for it was justly mine.
The labourinthes of policie I have trod
To find the clew of safetie, for my Countrie
Requird a head more knowing and a courage
As bold as his,—though I must say 'tis great.
His stile of Excellencie was my guift;
Money, the strength and fortune of the war,
The help of _England_ and the aide of _Fraance_,
I only can call mine: and shall I then,
Now in the sun-set of my daie of honour,
When I should passe with glory to my rest
And raise my Monument from my Countrie's praises,
Sitt downe and with a boorish patience suffer
The harvest that I labourd for to be
Anothers spoile? the peoples thancks and praises,
Which should make faire way for me to my grave,
To have another object? the choice fruiites
Of my deepe projects grace anothers Banquet?
No; this ungratefull Countrie, this base people,
Most base to my deserts, shall first with horrour
Know he that could defeat the _Spanish_ counsailes
And countermyne their dark works, he that made
The State what 'tis, will change it once againe
Ere fall with such dishonour.

_Mod_. Be advisd, Sir;
I love you as a friend, and as a wise man
Have ever honourd you: be as you were then,
And I am still the same. Had I not heard
Theis last distemperd words, I would have sworne
That in the making up of _Barnavelt_
Reason had only wrought, passion no hand in't.
But now I find you are lesse then a man,
Lesse then a common man, and end that race
You have so long run strongly like a child,
For such a one old age or honours surfeyts
Againe have made you.

_Bar_. This to me?

_Mod_. To you, Sir:
For is't not boyish folly (youthfull heat
I cannot call it) to spume downe what all
His life hath labourd for? Shall _Barnavelt_
That now should studie how to die, propound
New waies to get a name? or keep a being
A month or two to ruyn whatsoever
The good succes of forty yeeres employment
In the most serious affaires of State
Have raisd up to his memory? And for what?
Glory, the popular applause,—fine purchase
For a gray beard to deale in!

_Gro_. You offend him.

_Mod_. 'Tis better then to flatter him as you doe.
Be but yourself againe and then consider
What alteration in the State can be
By which you shall not loose. Should you bring in
(As heaven avert the purpose and the thought
Of such a mischief) the old Tyranny
That Spaine hath practisd, do you thinck you should be
Or greater then you are or more secure
From danger? Would you change the goverment,
Make it a Monarchie? Suppose this don
And any man you favourd most set up,
Shall your authoritie by him encrease?
Be not so foolishly seduced; for what
Can hope propose to you in any change
Which ev'n now you posses not?

_Bar_. Doe not measure
My ends by yours.

_Mod_. I know not what you ayme at.
For thirtie yeeres (onely the name of king
You have not had, and yet your absolute powre
Hath ben as ample) who hath ben employd
In office, goverment, or embassie,
Who raisd to wealth or honour that was not
Brought in by your allowaunce? Who hath held
His place without your lycence? Your estate is
Beyond a privat mans: your Brothers, Sonnes,
Frendes, Families, made rich in trust and honours:
Nay, this grave Maurice, this now Prince of Orange,
Whose popularitie you weakely envy,
Was still by you commaunded: for when did he
Enter the feild but 'twas by your allowaunce?
What service undertake which you approv'd not?
What victory was won in which you shard not?
What action of his renownd in which
Your counsaile was forgotten? Yf all this then
Suffice not your ambition but you must
Extend it further, I am sorry that
You give me cause to feare that when you move next
You move to your destruction.

_Bar_. Yf I fall
I shall not be alone, for in my ruyns
My Enemies shall find their Sepulchers.
_Modes-bargen_, though in place you are my equall,
The fire of honour, which is dead in you,
Burnes hotly in me, and I will preserve
Each glory I have got, with as much care
As I acheived it. Read but ore the Stories
Of men most fam'd for courage or for counsaile.
And you shall find that the desire of glory
(That last infirmity of noble minds)
Was the last frailty wise men ere putt of:
Be they my presidents.

_Gro_. 'Tis like yourself,
Like Barnavelt, and in that all is spoken.

_Leid_. I can do something in the State of Utrecht,
And you shall find the place of Secretarie,
Which you conferd upon me there, shall be,
When you employ me, usefull.

_Gro_. All I am
You know you may commaund: Ile nere enquire
What 'tis you goe about, but trust your counsailes
As the Ancients did their Oracles.

_Mod_. Though I speak
Not as a flatterer, but a friend, propound
What may not prejudice the State, and I
Will goe as far as any.

_Enter 2 Captaines_.

_Bar_. To all my service:[143]
Ere long you shall know more.--What are theis?

_Leid_. Captaines
That raild upon the Comissary.

_Bar_. I remember.

1_Cap_. Why, you dare charge a foe i'the head of his troope,
And shake you to deliver a petition
To a statesman and a frend?

2_Cap_. I need not seek him,
He has found me; and, as I am a soldier,
His walking towards me is more terrible
Then any enemies march I ever mett with.

1_Cap_. We must stand to it.

_Bar_. You, Sir, you?

2_Cap_. My Lord.

_Bar_. As I use this I waigh you: you are he
That when your Company was viewd and checkd
For your dead paies,[144] stood on your termes of honour,
Cryde out "I am a Gentleman, a Commaunder,
And shall I be curbd by my lords the States,"
(For thus you said in scorne) "that are but Merchants,
Lawyers, Apothecaries, and Physitians,
Perhaps of worser ranck"? But you shall know, Sir,
They are not such, but Potentates and Princes
From whom you take pay.

1_Cap_. This indeed is stately:
Statesmen, d'you call 'em?

2_Cap_. I beseech your Lordship:
'Twas wine and anger.

_Bar_. No, Sir; want of dutie:
But I will make that tongue give him the lye
That said soe, drunck or sober; take my word for't.
Your Compaine is cast: you had best complaine
To your Great Generall, and see if he
Can of himself maintaine you,—Come, _Modes-bargen_.

_[Exeunt Barnavelt, Modes-bargen, and Grotius_,

_Leid_. I am sorry for you, Captaine, but take comfort:
I love a Soldier, and all I can doe
To make you what you were, shall labour for you.
And so, good morrow, Gentlemen.

_[Exit_.

1 _Cap_. Yet theres hope;
For you have one friend left.

2 _Cap_. You are deceivd, Sir,
And doe not know his nature that gave promise
Of his assistance.

1 _Cap_. Who is't?

2 _Cap_. _Leidenberck_.
One of the Lords, the States, and of great powre too;
I would he were as honest. This is he
That never did man good, and yet no Suitor
Ever departed discontented from him.
Hee'll promise any thing: I have seene him talke
At the Church dore with his hat of to a Begger
Almost an houre togeather, yet when he left him
He gave him not a doyt. He do's profes
To all an outward pitty, but within
The devills more tender: the great plague upon him!
Why thinck I of him? he's no part of that
Must make my peace.

1 _Cap_. Why, what course will you take then?

2 _Cap_. A Bribe to _Barnavelts_ wiffe, or a kind wench
For my yong lord his Son, when he has drunck hard.
There's no way els to doo't.

1 _Cap_. I have gold good store
You shall not want that; and if I had thought on't
When I left _London_, I had fitted you
For a convenient Pagan.

2 _Cap_. Why, is there
Such store they can be spard?

1 _Cap_.[145] ... ... ...

2 _Cap_. I thanck you, Sir.

_[Exeunt_.

SCAENA 2.

_Enter[146] Barnavelt, Modes-bargen, Leidenberck,
Grotius, and Hogebeets. 

_Bar_. The States are sitting: all that I can doe Ile say in little; and in me theis Lords Promise as much. I am of your belief In every point you hold touching religion, And openly I will profes myself Of the _Arminian_ sect.

_Gro_. You honour it. 

_Hog_. And all our praires and service. 

_Bar_. Reverend man Your loves I am ambitious of. Already 'Tis knowne I favour you, and that hath drawne Libells against me; but the stinglesse hate Of those that wryte them I contempe. 

_Hog_. They are worthie Of nothing but contempt. 

_Bar_. That I confes, too; But yet we must expect much opposition Ere your opinions be confirmd. I know The _Prince of Orange_ a sworne enemie To your affections: he has vowd to crosse you, But I will still stand for you. My advice is That, having won the Burgers to your partie, Perswade them to enroll new Companies For their defence against the Insolence Of the old Soldiers garisond at _Utrecht_. Yet practise on them, too, and they may urge this: That since they have their pay out of that Province, Justice requires they should be of their partie: All that is don in _Utrecht_ shalbe practisd In _Roterdam_ and other Townes I name not. Farther directions you shall have hereafter, Till when I leave you. 

_Gro_. With all zeale and care We will perfomre this.  

_Leid_. This foundation Is well begun. 

_Gro_. And may the building prosper. 

_Mod_. Yet let me tell you, where Religion Is made a cloke to our bad purposes They seldom have succes. 

_Bar_. You are too holly: We live now not with Saincts but wicked men, And any thriving way we can make use of, What shape so ere it weares, to crosse their arts, We must embrace and cherish; and this course (Carrying a zealous face) will countenaunce Our other actions. Make the Burgers ours,
Raise Soldiers for our guard, strengthen our side
Against the now unequall opposition
Of this Prince that contemns us;[149] at the worst,
When he shall know there are some Regiments
We may call ours, and that have no dependaunce
Upon his favour, 'twill take from his pride
And make us more respected.

_Mod_. May it prove so.

_Enter Bredero, Vandort, Officers_.

_Bre_. Good day, my Lord.

_Vand_. Good Mounseiur Advocate,
You are an early stirrer.

_Bar_. 'Tis my dutie
To wayte your Lordships pleasure: please you to walke.

_Bre_. The Prince is wanting, and this meeting being
Touching the oath he is to take, 'twere fitt
That we attend him.

_Bar_. That he may set downe
What he will sweare, prescribing lymitts to us!
We need not add this wind by our observaunce
To sailes too full alredy. Oh, my Lords,
What will you doe? Have we with so much blood
Maintaind our liberties, left the allegeaunce
(How justly now it is no time to argue)
To _Spaine_, to offer up our slavish necks
To one that only is what we have made him?
For, be but you yourselves, this _Prince of Orange_
Is but as _Barnavelt_, a Servant to
Your Lordships and the State; like me maintaing;
The pomp he keepes, at your charge: will you then
Wayt his proud pleasure, and in that confes,
By daring to doe nothing, that he knowes not--
You have no absolute powre?

_Van_. I never sawe
The Advocate so mov'd.

_Bar_. Now to be patient
Were to be treacherous: trust once his counsaile
That never yet hath faild you. Make him know
That any limb of this our reverend Senate
In powre is not beneath him. As we sitt
Ile yeild you further reasons; 't he meane time
Commaund him by the Officers of the Court
Not to presse in untill your Lordships pleasure
Be made knowne to him.

_Vand_. 'Tis most requisite.

_Leid_. And for the honour of the Court.

_Vand_. Goe on;
You have my voice.

_Bre_. And mine;--yet wee'll proceed
As judgement shall direct us.

_Vand_. 'Tis my purpose.

_Bar_. In this disgrace I have one foot on his neck;
Ere long I'll set the other on his head
And sink him to the Center.

_Leid_. Looke to the dores there.

__Exeunt__.

SCAENA 3.

_Enter[150] Pr. of Orange, Gra: William, Collonells & Captaines_.

_Or_. I, now methinks I feel the happyness
Of being sprung from such a noble father,
That sacrificed his honour, life and fortune
For his lov'd Country. Now the blood and kindred
Of _Horne_ and _Egmont_ (Memories great Martyrs),
That must outlive all _Alva's_ Tyrannies
And when their Stories told ev'n shake his ashes,
Methinks through these vaines now, now at this instant,
I feel their Country's loss; I feel too--

_Will_. All feel sencibly,
And every noble heart laments their miseries,
And every eye, that labours not with mallice,
Sees your great services and through what dangers
You have rais'd those noble spirits monuments.

_Or_. What I have done I look not back to magnifie;
My Country calleth me to it. What I shall yet doe,
With all the industry and strength I have lent me
And grace of heaven to guide, so it but satisfie
The expectation of the State commandeth me
And in my Country's eye appeareth but lovely,
I shall sit downe, though old and bruizd yet happy;
Nor can the bitter and bold tongue of mallice,
That never yet spoke well of faire deservings,
With all her course aspersions flung upon me
Make me forsake my dutie, touch or shake me
Or gaine so much upon me as an anger,
Whilst here I hold me loyall. Yet believe, Gentlemen,
These wrongs are neither few nor slight, nor followed
By liberall tongues provoked by want or wine,
For such were to be smild at and so slighted,
But by those men, and shot so near mine honour
I feare my person too; but, so the State suffer not,
I am as easy to forget.
_Will_. Too easie; And that feeds up their mallice to a Monster. You are the arme oth' war, the Soldiers spiriet; The other but dead stories, you the dooer.

_Col_. It stands not with the honour you have won, Sir, Still built upon and betterd.

_or_. No more, good Collonell.

_Col_. The love the Soldier beares you to give way thus! To have your actions consturd, scornd and scoffd at By such malignant soules! you are yourself, Sir, And master of more mindes that love and honour ye.[152]

_Will_. Yf you would see it; but take through the mallice The evill intended now, now bent upon ye.

_or_. I pray ye, no more; as you love me, no more. Stupid I never was nor so secure yet To lead my patience to mine owne betraying: I shall find time and riper cause.-- _Guard at dore_.

Now, frends, Are my Lords the States set yet.

1 _Gu_. An houre agoe, Sir.

_or_. Beshrew ye, Gentlemen, you have made me tardy: Open the dore,

1 _Gu_. I beseech your Grace to pardon me.[153]

_or_. Do'st thou know who I am?

1 _Gu_. Yes, Sir, and honour you.

_or_. Why do'st thou keep the dore fast then?

_Will_. Thou fellow, Thou sawcy fellow, and you that stand by gaping! Is the Prince of no more value, no more respect Then like a Page?

2 _Gu_. We beseech your Excellencies To pardon us; our duties are not wanting, Nor dare we entertaine a thought to crosse ye: We are placed here on Command.

_or_. To keepe me out? Have I lost my place in Councell? are my services Grown to so poore regards, my worth so bankrupt? Or am I tainted with dishonest actions, That I am held unfitt my Cuntries busines? Who placd ye here?

1 _Gu_. The body of the Councell; And we beseech your Grace make it not our syn: They gave us strict commaund to stop your passage.
'Or_. 'Twas friendly done and like my noble masters.

'_Will_. Deny you place? make good the dore against ye?
This is unsufferable, most unsufferable.

'_Or_. Now I begin to feel those doubts; I fear still--

'_Col_. So far to dare provoke ye! 'tis too monstrous;
And you forget your self, your birth, your honour,
The name of Soldier if you suffer this,
Suffer from these, these things, these--pox upon't!--
These molds of men made noble by your services,
Your daily sweatstts.

1 _Cap_. It must not be endured thus,
The wrong extends to us, we feel it severally.

2 _Cap_. Your sweet humility has made 'em scorn ye
And us, and all the world that serve their uses;
And stick themselves up teachers, masters, princes,
Allmost new gods too, founders of new faiths.
--Well force your way.

'_Col_. Let's see then who dare stop ye.

'_Gu_. Not we, I am sure.

'_Col_. Let's see who dare deny ye
Your place and right of councell.

'_Or_. Stay, I command ye;
He that puts forward first to this wild action
Has lost my love and is become my enemy,
My mortal enemy. Put up your weapons,
You draw 'em against order, duty, faith;
And let me die ere render such examples.
The men you make so mean, so slight account of,
And in your anger prise, not in your honours,
Are Princes, powerful Princes, mighty Princes;
That daily feed more men of your great fashion
And noble rank, pay and maintain their fortunes,
Then any monarch _Europe_ has: and for this bounty,
If ye consider truly, Gentlemen,
And honestly, with thankful hearts remember,
You are to pay them back again your service:
They are your masters, your best masters, noblest,
those that protect your states, hold up your fortunes;
And for this good you are to sacrifice
Your thanks and duties, not your threats and anger.
And all Soldiers else strike with their arms,
And draw from them the means of life and honour,
Are double dye in faith to observe their pleasures.

'_Col_. A Prince of rare humanity and temper.
Sir, as you teach us armes, you man our minds, too,
With civil precepts, making us true Soldiers,
Then worthy to receive a trust from others
When we stand masters of our own discretions.
Enter Barnavelt, Modesbargen, Leidenberch, Grotius Bredero, Vandort & Hogerbeets.

Will. Your good and great example tyes us all, Sir.

Cap. The Councell's broken up.

Or. My noble Lords,
Let it not seesme displeasing to your wisdomes,
I humbly ask in what I have offended,
Or how suspected stand, or with what cryme blotted,
That this day from your fellowship, your councell,
My Cuntries care and where I owe most service,
Like a man perisht in his worth I am exilde.

Bar. Your Grace must know we cannot wait attendaunce,
Which happily you looke for.

Or. Wayt, my lords!

Bar. Nor what we shall designe for the States comfort
Stay your deliberate crosses. We know you are able,
And every way a wise Prince fitt for counsell;
But I must tell ye, Sir, and tell ye truly,
The Soldier has so blowne ye up, so swelld ye
And those few services you call your owne,
That now our commendations are too light gales,
Too slacke and emptie windes, to move your worthes;
And trumpets of your owne tongue and the Soldiers
Now onely fill your sailes.

Bre. Be not so bitter.

Bar. We mix with quiet speritts, staid and temperate,
And those that levell at not great but good ends
Dare hold us their Companions, not their Servants,
And in that ranck be ready to supply us.
Your Grace is growne too haughtie.

Leid. Might it please you
But thinkck, Sir, of our honest services
(I dare not terme them equall) and but waigh well,
In which I know your Grace a perfect master,
Your judgment excellent, and then but tell us
And truly (which I know your goodnes will doe)
Why should we seeme so poore, so undertrodden,
And though not trusted with the State and Councell,
Why so unable valued. Pardon, great Sir,
If those complaine who feele the waight of envy,
If such poore trod on wormes make show to turne againe.
Nor is it we that feele, I hope, nor you, Sir,
That gives the cullour of this difference:
Rumour has many tongues but few speak truth:
We feele not onely,--if we did 'twere happie--
Our Cuntry, Sir, our Cuntrie beares the blow too;
But you were ever noble.

Or. Good my Lords,
Let it be free your Servant, chargd in mallice,
If not fling of his crymes, at least excuse 'em
To you my great correcter. Would to heaven, Sir,
That syn of pride and insolence you speake of,
That pufft up greatnes blowne from others follyes
Were not too neere akin to your great Lordship
And lay not in your bosom, your most deere one.
You taint me, Sir, with syns concerne my manners,--
If I have such Ile studdy to correct 'em;
But, should I taint you, I should charge ye deeper:
The cure of those would make ye shrinck and shake, too,
--Shake of your head.

_Bar_. You are too weak ith' hams, Sir.

_Or_. Who raisd these new religious forces, Sir,
And by what warrant? what assignement had ye
From the States generall? who blew new fires?
Even fires of fowle rebellion, I must tell ye;
The bellowes to it, Religion. You were lov'd yet
But for your ends,--through all the Townes, the Garrisons,
To fright the union of the State, to shake it.
What syns are theis? You may smile with much comfort,
And they that see ye and not looke closely to ye
May crye too er't be long.

_Bar_. Your Grace has leave, Sir,
And tis right good it be soe.--Follow me home,
And there Ile give ye new directions
How to proceed, and sodainely.

_Leid_. | We are yours, Sir.
_Mod_. |

_[Exeunt Bar., Leid., Mod_.

_Or_. My lords, to what a monster this man's grown
You may (if not abusd with dull securitie)
See plaine as day.

_Bre_. We doe not like his carriage.

_Van_. He do's all, speaks all, all disposes.

_Or_. Spoiles all.
He that dare live to see him work his ends out
Uncrossd and unprevented, that wretched man
Dare live to see his Cuntry shrinck before him.
Consider my best lords, my noblest masters,
How most, most fitt, how just and necessary
A sodaine and a strong prevention.

_Bre_. We all conceave your Grace and all look through him
And find him what we feare not yet but grieve at.
You shall have new Commission from us all
To take in all those Townes he has thrust his men in:
When you have that, proceed as likes your Excellence.

_Or_. Your lordships true friend and most obedient Servant.

_Van_. Come to the present busines then.
_Or_. We attend you.

[_Exeunt_.

_Actus Secundus_.

SCAENA PRIMA.

_Enter Barnavelt, Leidenberch, Modesbargen_.

_Bar_. I have with danger ventur'd thus far to you
That you might know by me our plot's discover'd.
But let not that discourage you: though _Van Dort_.
And _Bredero_. with others, have assented
To force this Towne, stand you still on your Guard,
And on my reputation rest assured
With violence they never dare attempt you;
For that would give the world to understand
Th'united Provinces, that by their concord
So long have held out 'gainst th'opposition
Of all _Spaines_ Governours, their plotts and armyes,
Make way to their most certaine ruyn by
A Civill warre.

_Leid_. This cannot be denide.

_Bar_. And so at any time we may make our peace,
Returning to our first obedience
Upon what termes we please.

_Mod_. That is not certaine;
For, should we tempt them once to bring their forces
Against the Towne and find we give it up
For want of strength to keepe it, the Conditions
To which we must subscribe are in their will
And not our choice or pleasure.

_Bar_. You are governd
More by your feare then reason.

_Mod_. May it prove soe:
That way I would be guiltie.

_Bar_. How appeere
The new raisd Companies?

_Leid_. They stand full and faithfull;
And for the Burgers, they are well affected
To our designes. The _Arminians_ play their parts too,
And thunder in their meetings hell and damnation
To such as hold against us.

_Bar_. 'Tis well orderd:
But have you tride by any means (it skills not
How much you promise) to wyn the old Soldiers
(The _English_ Companies, in chief, I ayme at)
To stand firme for us?

_Leid_. We have to that purpose
Imploíd _Rock-Giles_, with some choice Burgers els
That are most popular to the Officers
That doe command here in the Collonells absence.
We expect them every mynitt. Yf your Lordship
(For 'tis not fitt, I think, you should be seene)
Will please to stand aside (yet you shalbe
Within the hearing of our Conference)
You shall perceive we will imploy all arts
To make them ours.

_Mod_. They are come.

_Bar_. Be earnest with them.

_Enter Rock-Giles, 2 Burgers, Captaines, Leuitenant_.

_R: Giles_. With much adoe I have brought 'em: the prowde Shellains[154]
Are paid too well, and that makes them forget
We are their Masters.

1 _Burg_. But when we tooke them on,
Famishd allmost for want of entertainement,
Then they cryde out they would do any thing
We would command them.

1 _Cap_. And so we say still,
Provided it be honest.

_Giles_. Is it fitt
That mercenary Soldiers, that for pay
Give up their liberties and are sworne t'expose
Their lyves and fortunes to all dangers, should
Capitulate with their Lords?

1 _Burg_. Prescribing when
They are pleasd to be commandd and for what.

_Giles_. Answeare to this.

_Leuit_. You know our resolutions,
And therefore, Captaine, speak for all.

1 _Cap_. I will,
And doe it boldly: We were entertaind
To serve the generall States and not one Province;
To fight as often as the Prince of _Orange_
Shall lead us forth, and not to stand against him;
To guard this Cuntrie, not to ruyn it;
To beat of foreigne Enemies, not to cherish
Domestique factions. And where you upbraid us
With the poore means we have to feed, not cloath us,
Forgetting at how deere a rate we buy
The triffles we have from you, thus I answeare:--
Noe Cuntrie ere made a defensive war
And gaind by it but you. What privat Gentleman
That onely trailes a pike, that comes from _England_
Or _Fraunce_, but brings gold with him which he leaves here
And so enriches you? Where such as serve
The _Polander, Bohemian, Dane_, or _Turck_,
Though they come almost naked to their Collours,
Besides their pay (which they contemne) the spoiles
Of armyes overthrowne, of Citties sackd,
Depopulations of wealthie Cuntries,
If he survive the uncertaine chaunce of war,
Returne him home to end his age in plenty
Of wealth and honours.

_Bar_. This is shrewdly urgd.

1 _Cap_. Where we, poore wretches, covetous of fame onely,
Come hether but as to a Schoole of war
To learne to struggle against cold and hunger,
And with unwearied steps to overcome
A tedious march when the hot Lyons breath
Burnes up the feilds; the glory that we ayme at
Being our obedience to such as doe
Command in cheif; to keepe our rancks, to fly
More then the death all mutenies and rebellions.
And would you then, whose wisdomes should correct
Such follies in us, rob us of that litle,
That litle honour that rewards our service,
To bring our necks to the Hangmans Sword or Halter,
Or (should we scape) to brand our foreheads with
The name of Rebells?

_Giles_. I am put to a non plus:--
Speake mine Here Secretarie.

_Leid_. I have heard
So much deliverd by you and so well,
Your actions, too, at all parts answearing
What you have spoken, that I must acknowledge
We all stand far indebted to your service:
And therefore, as unto the worthiest,
The faithfulllest and strongest that protect
Us and our Cuntries, we now seek to you,
And would not but such men should be remembred
As principall assistants in the Care
Of a disease which now the State lyes sick of.
I know you love the valiant Prince, and yet
You must graunt him a Servant to the States
As you are, Gentlemen, and therefore will not
Defend that in him which you would not cherish
In cold blood in your selves; for should he be
Disloyall--

_Leuit_. He disloyall! 'tis a language
I will not heare.

2 _Cap_. Such a suspition of him
Is one that wore a Sword deserv'd the lye.

1 _Cap_. We know your oild tongue; and your rethorique
Will hardly work on us that are acquainted
With what faire language your ill purposes
Are ever cloak'd, nor ever wilbe won
To undervalue him whose least fam'd service
Scomes to be put in ballance with the best
Of all your Counsailes; and for his faith, O heaven!
It do's as far transcend yours in your prayers
As light do's darkness.

_Leid_. I perceive 'tis true
That such as flatter Servants make them proud.
We'll use a rougher way, and here command you
To leave the Towne, and sudainely, if you wish not
To be forced hence.

1 _Cap_. Your new raisd Companies
Of such as never saw the Enemie
Can hardly make that good: we were placed here
By the allowaunce of the generall States
And of the Prince to keep it to their use.

_Leuit_. And we will doe it.

1 _Cap_. And while there is Lead
Upon a house, or any Soldier master
But of a doyt: when that is gon, expect
That we will make you sport, or leave our lives
To witness we were faithfull.--Come, Lieutenant,
Let us draw up the Companies; and then
Charge on us when you please.

[Exeunt_.

_Mod_. This I foresaw.

_Bar_. Oh, I am lost with anger! are we falne
So lowe from what we were, that we dare heare
This from our Servants and not punish it?
Where is the terrour of our names, our powre
That _Spaine_ with feare hath felt in both his _Indies_?
We are lost for ever, and from freemen growne
Slaves so contemptible as no worthie Prince,
That would have men, not sluggish Beasts, his Servants,
Would ere vouchsafe the owning. Now, my frends,
I call not on your furtherance to preserve
The lustre of my actions; let me with them
Be nere remembred, so this government
Your wives, your lives and liberties be safe:
And therefore, as you would be what you are,
Freemen and masters of what yet is yours,
Rise up against this Tirant, and defend
With rigour what too gentle lenitie
Hath almost lost.

_Leid_. Ile to the new raisd Soldiers
And make them firme.

_Giles_. Ile muster up the Burgers
And make them stand upon their guard.
_Mod_ . For me
Ille not be wanting.

_Bar_ . Ille back to the _Hage_
And something there Ille doe that shall divert
The torrent that swells towards us, or sinck in it;
And let this Prince of _Orange_ seat him sure,
Or he shall fall when he is most secure.

[_Exeunt_.

SCAENA 2.

_Enter Holderus, Dutch-woemen and an English Gentlewoemen_.

1 _D. W_. Here come the Sisters: that's an _English_ Gentlewoman,
Let's pray for hir Conversion.

2 _D. W_. You are wellcom, Lady,
And your comming over hether is most happy;
For here you may behold the generall freedom
We live and traffique in, the ioy of woemen.
No emperious _Spanish_ eye governes our actions,
Nor _Italian_ jealouzie locks up our meetings:
We are ourselves our owne disposers, masters;
And those that you call husbands are our Servants.

3 _D. W_. Your owne Cuntry breedes ye hansom, maintaines ye brave,
But with a stubborne hand the husbands awe ye:
You speake but what they please, looke where they point ye,
And though ye have some libertie 'tis lymitted.

4 _D. W_. Which cursse you must shake of. To live is nothing;
To live admir'd and lookd at,--poore deservings
But to live soe, so free you may commaund, Lady,
Compell, and there raigne Soveraigne.

1 _D. W_. Do you thinck there's any thing
Our husbands labour for, and not for our ends?
Are we shut out of Counsailes, privacies,
And onely lymitted our household busines?
No, certaine, Lady; we pertake with all,
Or our good men pertake no rest. Why this man
Works theis or theis waies, with or against the State,
We know and give allowaunces.

2 _D. W_. Why such a Gentleman,
Thus hansom and thus yong, commandaus such a quarter;
Where theis faire Ladies lye; why the _Grave's_ angry
And Mounseiur _Barnavelt_ now discontent,--
Do you thinck it's fitt we should be ignorant?

2 _D. W_. Or why there's sprung up now a new devotion?
Good Gentlewoeman, no. Do you see this fellow?
He is a Scholler and a parlous Scholler,
Or whether he be a Scholler or no 'tis not a doy't matter:
He's a fine talker and a zealous talker;
We can make him thinck what we list, say what we list,
Print what we list and whom we list abuse in't.

_Eng.-gentw_. And a Teacher do you say?

_2 D. W_. A singuler teacher,
For so we hold such here.

_Eng.-gentw_. Doe they use no modestie
Upon my life, some of theis new _Arminians_,
Theis hissing tosts!

_Hold_. An ignorant strange woman,
Whose faith is onely tride by a Coach and foure horses.

_3 D. W_. Come, you must be as we are and the rest of your Countrywomen;
You doe not know the sweet on't.

_Eng.-gentw_. Indeed, nor will not;
Our Cuntry brings us up to faire Obedience
To know our husbands for our Governours,
So to obey and serve 'em: two heads make monsters;
Nor Dare we thinck of what is don above us,
Nor talk of _Graves_.

_Hold_. The _Grave_ shall smart for 't shortly;
Goe you and tell him soe, goody _English woman_:
You have long tayles and long tongues, but we shall clip 'em.

_Enter Vandermitten_.[155]

_I D. W_. How now? what haste?

_Vand_. The Prince is drawing up to us
And has disarmd all the strong Townes about us
Of our new Soldiers; the _English_ now stand only
And the old Companies.

_Eng.-gentw_. Now your wisdomes, Ladies,
Your learning also, Sir, your learned prating--
You that dare prick your eares up at great Princes
And doble charge your tongue with new opinions,--
What can you doe? or can theis holly woemen
That you have arm'd against obedience
And made contempners of the fooles their husbands,
Examiners of State,--can they doe any thing?
Can they defy the Prince?

_Hold_. They shall defie him,
And to his face: why doe not ye raise the Burgers
And draw up the new Companies?

_Enter Leidenberge_?[156]

_Leid_. Away, good women!
This is no sport for you: goe, cheere your husbands
And bid 'em stand now bravely for their liberties.
_Arnam_ and _Roterdam_ and all about us
Have yeilded him obedience; all the new Companies
Purgd and disarmd. Goe you; talke to the Arminians,
And raise their harts. Good Ladies, no more Councells:
This is no time to puppet in.

1 _D. W_. We are gon, Sir,

2 D. W_. And will so coniure up our lazie husbands.

Eng.-gentw_. And coniure wisely, too; the devill will faile else.

_Exeunt Women_.

_Leid_. What's she?

_Vand_. An English woman.

_Leid_. Would they were all shipt well
To th' other part of the world. These stubborn English
We onely feare.

_Vand_. We are strong enough to curb 'em.

_Leid_. But we have turnop hearts.

_Enter a Messenger_.

Now what's the next newes?

_Mess_._ [157] The Prince is at the Barriers, and desires his entraunce

_Leid_. He must not enter:--what Company is with him?

_Mess_. But few, and those unarmed too: about some twenty.

_Leid_. And what behind?

_Mess_. We can discover none.

_Leid_. Let's goe and view: Brothers, be strong and valiant;
We have lost the Towne els and our freedoms with it.

_Exeunt_.

SCAENA 3.

_Enter 1 Captaine[158] and Soldiers_.

_Sold_. They charge us not to let him in.

1 _Cap_. We will doe it;
He has our faithes.--What strengthe's upon the Guard?

_Sold_. Two hundred English.

1 _Cap_. Goe, and give this commaund then:
That if any Burgers or Arminian Soldiers
Offer to come upon the Guard, or let in or out
Any without our knowledge, presently
To bend their strength upon 'em.

_Sold_. It shalbe don.  _Exit_.

1 _Cap_. Do you disperse to the old Companies,
Bid 'em be ready; tell 'em now is the time,
And charge 'em keepe a strong eye ore the Burgers.
Ile up to'th Guard.

_Sold_. Wee'le doe it seriously.

    _Exeunt_.

SCAENA 4.

_Enter Prince of Orange, William,
     Captaine,[159] Leutenant, &c_.

_Or_. None of our frends upon the Portt? Is this the welcom
Of such a Towne, so bound in preservation
To us and ours?

2 _Cap_. The Prince is sadly angry.

_Leuit_. Can ye blame him, Captaine, when such a den of dog whelps
Are fosterd here against him? You will rouse anon:
There are old Companies sure, honest and faithfull,
That are not poysond with this ranck infection.
Now they appeare, Sir.

_Enter Captaine[160] on the walls_.

1 _Cap_. Will your Grace please to enter?

_Or_. And thanck ye too.

1 _Cap_. The Port is open for ye.

_Or_. You see my number.

1 _Cap_. But I hope 'tis more, Sir.

_Or_. Theis must in first; 'Twill breed a good securitie.

1 _Cap_. We stand all ready for your Grace.

_Or_. We thanck ye.

1 _Cap_. What Companies come on, Sir.

_Or_. Three Troope of horse,
That will be with ye presently: keepe strong the Port.

1 _Cap_. Enter when please your Grace; we shall stand sure, Sir.
SCAENA 5.

_Enter Leidenberge, Vandermitten,[161] Rock Giles_.

_Leid_. Is he come in, do you say?

_Vand_. He is, but followed
So slenderly and poore.

_Leid_. We are undone then;
He knowes too well what ground he ventures on.
Where are the _Arminian_ Soldiers?

_R. Giles_. They stand ith' market place.

_Leid_. Are they well armd?

_R. Giles_. Ready to entertaine him.

_Leid_. Who commaunds the Port?

_Vand_. The _English_.

_Leid_. Ten towsand devills!
Odd's sacrament! a meere trick to betray us.

_Vand_. We can discover none behind.

_Leid_. A trick:
Those _English_ are the men borne to undoe us.

_Enter Messenger_.[162]

_Mess_. Arme, arme, and now stand to your ancient freedoms!
Three troope of horse, ten Companies of foote
Are enterd now the Port.

_Leid_. I told ye, Gentlemen.

_Mess_. The _English_ make a stand upon the new Companies,
Ready to charge 'em if they stirr.

_Leid_. Oh mischief!
All our designes are crackt, layed open, ruynd:
Let's looke if any cure remaine. O devill!

[_Exeunt_.

SCAENA 6.

_Enter Duch-woemen and Burgers_.
_Duch-W_. The Prince, the Prince, the Prince! O our husbands.

_Burg_. Goe pray, goe pray, goe pray: We shalbe hangd all.

_Duch-W_. I would it were no worse:

_Enter Eng.-gentw_.

_Eng.-gentw_. Now where's your valours, You that would eat the Prince?

_Duch-W_. Sweet _English_ Gentlewoman.

_Eng.-gentw_. Fy, doe not run! for shame! body a me, How their feare outstincks their garlick! litle Sir _Gregory_.

_Enter Holderus_.[163]

Art thou afraid, too? out with thy two edgd tongue And lay about thee!

_Hold_. Out o' my way, good woeman, Out o’ my way: I shalbe whipt, and hangd too.

_Eng.-gentw_. Theis fellowes have strong faithes and notable valours: Ile walk about and see this sport.

[_Exeunt_.

SCAENA 7.

_Enter Orange, Leidenberge, Burgers, Captaines, Soldiers, and Arminians_.

_Or_. Now, Mounseuir _Leidenberge_ you may se openly The issues of your desperate undertakings, And your good helps, myne Heeires; now you must feele too, And to your greifes, what the deserts of those are That boldly dare attempt their Cuntries ruyn And who we serve, how faithfully and honestly You must and shall confes too: not to blind ends Hood-winckt with base ambition, such as yours are, But to the generall good.--Let[164] theis new Companies March by us through the Market, so to the Guard house, And there disarme;--wee'll teach ye true obedience;-- Then let 'em quitt the Towne, hansom swag fellowes And fitt for fowle play.

_Leiut_. Theis are but heavy marches.

_Or_. They wilbe lighter straight, when they are unfurnishd You put your trust in theis; you have tall defences,-- Treason maintaind with heresie, fitt weapons! --So now disarme the Towne: wee'll plant new Governours!
_Leid_. Will your Grace be pleas'd to heare?

_Or_. Yes, at the _Hage_, Sir,
Till when bethinc you of your acts and answears,
For there before the generall State--Where's _Modesbargen_?

_Cap_. He left the Towne two daies agoe.

_Or_. A guilty feare,
But we shall fright him worsse. Good order take
For the Towne, and what fitt Garrison to leave in't.
We are homeward bound, where we shall make you wellcom,
You have instructed us in what free fashion.
Come, Gentlemen, let's now goe take our rest:
Proud confidence is but a foole at best.

[_Exeunt_.

_Actus Tercius_.

SCAENA PRIMA.

_Enter Bredero, Vandort_.[165]

_Bre_. Myne Heire Vandort, what thinck ye of the Prince now?

_Vandort_. Like a true noble Gentlemen he has borne himself
And a faire fortunate Soldier: I hold the State, Sir,
Most happie in his care, and this torne Cuntry,
Whose wounds smart yet, most bound to his deliveraunce.

_Bre_. 'Tis certaine his proceedings in this busines,
As in all els, have byn most wise and constant
And waited on with full wingd Expedition:
How many Townes armd with theis new Pretenders,
Stird up and steeld by founders of new doctrines,
The collour to their Cause, hath he (and sodainely)
Disarmd againe and setled in obedience,
And without bloodshed, Lords, without the Sword
And those Calamities that shake a kingdom:
So gently and without noyse he has performd this
As if he had don it in a dreame.

_Vand_. Most certaine,
He has run through a busines will much add to him
And set his vertues of with greater Lustre:
But that a man so wise as Mounseiur _Barnavelt_,
So trusted, so rewarded for his Service,
And one that built the ladder to his honour
Of open, honest actions, strong and straight still,
Should now be doubted!

_Bred_. I know not nor I wish it not,
But if he have a fowle hart't has byn hid long,
And cunningly that poynson has byn carried.
_Vand_. But why a father to theis new professions?
Why should he strengthen those opinions
That all true learning much laments and greives at
And sink's the soules sweet union into ruin?
Why theis, my lords? and why in every Garrison,
Unles he had an end that shot at evil,
Should he so strongly plant theis fire-brands
And through his powre add daylie to their nombers?

_Bred_. Most sure he is suspected, strongly suspected
But that a man of his great trust and busines
Should sink or suffer under doubts or whispers
Or loose his honour by an others envy,
Is not faire play nor honest. The Prince of _Orange_,
Most thinck, affects him not, nor he the Prince.
That either of their angry wills should prove
A lawful act to ruyn one another,
And not a medium of more open Justice,
More equall and more honorable, step in,
Man had no powre to stand nor fall with honour.
If he be false, honest and upright proofes
Will ripen the Imposture.

_Enter Barnavelt and his Son_.

[1 _Lord_ [166] Here he comes, sir.]

_Vand_. Methincks he beares not in his Countenaunce
The fulnes of that grave and constant sperit,
Nor in his eye appeeres that heat and quicknes
He was wont to move withall. --Salute, and counsell:
Let's leave him to his thoughts.

_Son_. They mind ye not:
Now, as I have a soule, they looke not on ye.

_Bar_. My noble Lords, what is't appeeres upon me
So ougly strange you start and fly my Companie?
What plague sore have ye spide, what taynt in honour,
What ill howre in my life so cleere deserving
That rancks in this below your fellowships?
For which of all my cares, of all my watches,
My services (too many and too mightie
To find rewards) am I thus recompenced,
Not lookd on, not saluted, left forgotten
Like one that came to petition to your honours,--
Over the shoulder sleighted?

_Bred_. Mounseiur _Barnavelt_.
I am sorry that a man of your great wisdom
And those rare parts that make ye lovd and honourd,
In every Princes Court highly esteemd of,
Should loose so much in point of good and vertue
Now in the time you ought to fix your faith fast,
The creadit of your age, carelessly loose it,--
I dare not say, ambitiously--that your best frends,
And those that ever thought on your example,
Dare not with comon safetie now salute ye.
_Bar_. I loose in point of honour! My friends feare me!
My age suspected too! now as ye are iust men
Unknit this riddle.

1 _Lord_. You are doubted, strongly doubted.

_Bar_. O the devill.

2 _Lord_. Your loialtie suspected.

_Bar_. Who dare doe this?

_Bred_. We wish all well; and you that know how dangerous
In men of lesser mark theis foule attempts are
And often have bewaild 'em in the meaneest,
I make no doubt will meet your owne fault sodainely
And chide yourself; grow faire againe and flourish
In the same full esteeme ye held and favour.

_Bar_. And must I heare this sett downe for all my service?
Is this the glorious mark of my deservings?
Taynted and torne in honour must I perish,
And must theis silver curles, o you unthanckfull,
Theis emblemes of my frostie cares and travells
For you and for the State, fall with disgraces?
Goe, fall before your new Prince! worship him,
Fill all your throates with flattery, cry before him
'Tis he, and onely he, has truly serv'd ye!
Forget me and the peace I have wrought your Cuntry;
Bury my memory, raze out my name,
My forty yeares endeavoures write in dust
That your great Prince may blow 'em into nothing;
And on my Monument (you most forgetfull)
Fling all your scornes, erect an yroon-toothed envy
That she may gnaw the pious stones that hides me.

_Vand_. Ye are too much mov'd, and now too late ye find, Sir,
How naked and unsafe it is for a long Gowne
To buckle with the violence of an Army.
The Emperour _Traian_ challenging a yong man
And a swift runner to try his speed against him,
The Gentleman made answeare sodainely
It was not safe nor fitt to hold contention
With any man commaunded thirtie legions.
You know the Prince and know his noble nature,
I thinck you know his powre, too: of all your wisdomes
This will not show the least nor prove the meanest
In good mens eyes, I thinck, in all that know ye,
To seeke his love: gentle and faire demeanours
Wyn more then blowes and soften stubborne angers.
Let me perswade ye.

_Bar_. When I am a Sycophant
And a base gleaner from an others favour,
As all you are that halt upon his crutches.
Shame take that smoothnes and that sleeke subjection!
I am myself, as great in good as he is,
As much a master of my Cuntries fortunes,
And one to whom (since I am forc'd to speak it,
Since mine owne tongue must be my Advocate)
This blinded State that plaies at boa-peep with us,
This wanton State that's weary of hir lovers
And cryes out "Give me younger still and fresher!"
Is bound and so far bound: I found hir naked,
Floung out a dores and starvd, no frends to pitty hir,
The marks of all her miseries upon hir,
An orphan State that no eye smild upon:
And then how carefully I undertooke hir,
How tenderly and lovingly I noursd hir!
But now she is fatt and faire againe and I foold,
A new love in hir armes, my doatings scornd at.
And I must sue to him! be witnes, heaven,
If this poore life were forfeyt to his mercy,
At such a rate I hold a scornd subiection
I would not give a penney to redeeme it.
I have liv'd ever free, onely depended
Upon the honestie of my faire Actions,
Nor am I now to studdy how to die soe.

_Bred_. Take better thoughts.

_Bar_. They are my first and last,
The legacie I leave my friends behind me.
I never knew to flatter, to kneele basely
And beg from him a smile owes me an honour.
Ye are wreatches, poore starv'd wreatches fedd on crumbs
That he flings to ye: from your owne aboundaunce
Wretched and slavish people ye are becom
That feele the griping yoak and yet bow to it.
What is this man, this Prince, this God ye make now,
But what our hands have molded, wrought to fashion,
And by our constant labours given a life to?
And must we fall before him now, adoare him,
Blow all we can to fill his sailes with greatnes?
Worship the Image we set up ourselves?
Put fate into his hand? into his will
Our lives and fortunes? howle and crye to our owne clay
"Be mercifull, o Prince?" o, pittied people!
Base, base, poore patch men! You dare not heare this;
You have sold your eares to slavery; begon and flatter.
When ere your politick Prince putts his hooke into my nose
Here must he put his Sword too.

_Bred_. We lament ye.

[Exeunt_.

_Enter the Son_.

_Son_. We are undon, Sir.

_Bar_. Why?

_Son_. For certaine perishd.
_Utrecht_ is taken in, _Modesbargen_ fled,
And _Leidenberge_ a Servant to their pleasures,--
A prisoner, Sir.
_Bar_. Ha!

_Son_. 'Tis too true.

_Bar_. A prisoner?

_Son_. And, some say, has byn tortured, reveal'd much, 
Even all he knowes. No letters are against ye, 
For those he burnt; but they have so much fool'd him 
That his owne tongue--

_Bar_. He cannot be so boyish.

_Son_. My gouverment of _Barghen_ is dispos'd of; 
Their anger now against us all profest, 
And in your ruyn all must fall.

_Bar_. A prisoner! 
_Modesbargen_ fledd! I am glad he is scapt their fingers. 
Now if the devill had but this _Leidenberge_ 
I were safe enough. What a dull foole was I, 
A stupid foole, to wrap up such a secreat 
In a sheepe's hart! o I could teare my flesh now 
And beat my leaden braines!

_Son_. Faith, try the Prince, Sir; 
You are at your last.

_Bar_. Art thou my Son? thou lyest; 
I never got a Parasite, a Coward. 
I seeke the Prince or bend in base submission! 
Ile seeke my grave first. Yf I needes must fall 
And that the fatall howre is cast of _Barnavelt_, 
Just like a strong demolishd Tower ile totter 
And fright the neighbour Cuntries with my murmour. 
My ruyns shall reach all: the valiant Soldier, 
Whose eies are unacquainted but with anger, 
Shall weep for me because I fedd and noursd him; 
Princes shall mourne my losse, and this unthanckfull, 
Forgetful Cuntry, when I sleepe in ashes, 
Shall feele and then confes I was a father.

_[Exeunt_.

SCAENA 2.

_Enter P. of Orange, William, Bredero, Vandort, 
Lords, Collonells, Captaines_.

_Bred_. Will your Excellence please to sitt?

_[Table: Bell_.

_Or_. I am prov'd your Lordships 
So willingly restore me to that place
From which the envy of the Advocate
Of late hath forc'd me. And that you may know,
How ere his malice live to me, all hatred
Is dead in me to him, I am a Suitour
He may be sent for; for, as _Barnavelt_ is
A member of this body politique,
I honour him, and will not scorne to yeild
A strict accompt of all my Actions to him;
And though my Enemie, while he continues
A frend to his owne fame and loyall to[167]
The State, I love him and shall greive that he,
When he falls from it must deserve my pity.

_Vand_. This disposition in your Excellence
Do's well becom you, but would wrong our judgements
To call one as a partner to these counsailes
That is suspected, and ev'n then when all
His dark designes and deepest purposes
Are to be sifted.

_Bred_. It were most unfit,
And therefore we entreat your Highnes to[167]
Presse it no further.

_Or_. My good lords, your pardon;
You are your owne disposers.--Gentlemen,
I shall a while entreat ye to forbear
The troble that you put upon yourselves
In following me. I can need no defence here,
Being left among these whose grave counsailes ever
Have lookd out for my safetie. 'Tis your pleasure
And therefore I embrace it.

_Exeunt Collonells & Captaines_.

_Vand_. Now, when you please,
Your Excellence may deliver what you have
Observe'd concerning the _Arminian_ faction,
What hopes and heads it had, for without question
It found more favorers, and great ones too,
Then yet we have discoverd.

_Or_. My grave Lords,
That it hath byn my happines to take in,
And with so little blood, so many Townes
That were falne of, is a large recompence
For all my travell; and I would advise
That (since[168] all now sing the sweet tunes of Concord,
No Sword unsheathd, the meanes to hurt cut off,
And all their stings pluckd out that would have used them
Against the publique peace) we should end here
And not with labour search for that which will
Afflict us when 'tis found. Something I know
That I could wish I nere had understood,
Which yet if I should speake, as the respect
And duty that I owe my Cuntry binds me,
It wilbe thought 'tis rather privat spleene
Then pious zeale. But that is not the hazard
Which I would shun: I rather feare the men
We must offend in this, being great, rich, wise,
Sided with strong frends, trusted with the guard
Of places most important, will bring forth
Rather new births of tumult, should they be
Calld to their Triall, then appease disorder
In their iust punishment; and in doing Justice
On three or foure that are delinquents, loose
So many thousand inocents that stand firme
And faithfull patriots. Let us leave them therefore
To the scourge of their owne consciences: perhaps
Th'assurance that they are yet undiscoverd,
Because not cyted to their answear, will
So work with them hereafter to doe well
That we shall ioy we sought no farther in it.

_Vand_. Such mild proceedings in a Goverment
New setled, whose maine strength had it's dependaunce
Upon the powre of some particuler men,
Might be given way to, but in ours it were
Unsafe and scandalous: then the _Provinces_
Have lost their liberties, Justice hir Sword,
And we prepared a way for our owne ruyn
When for respect or favour unto any,
Of what condition soever, we
Palliat seditions and forbeare to call
Treason by hir owne name.

1 _Lord_. It must not be:
Such mercie to ourselves were tirranie.

2 _Lord_. Nor are we to consider who they are
That have offended, but what's the offence
And how it should be punishd, to deter
Others by the example.

_Bred_. Which we will doe;
And using that united powre which warrants
All we think fitt, we doe intreat your Highnes
(For willingly we would not say comaund you),
As you affect the safetie of the State
Or to preserve your owne deserved honours
And never-tainted loyaltie, to make knowne
All such as are suspected.

_Or_. I obey you;
And though I cannot give up certaine proofes
To point out the delinquents, I will name
The men the generall voice proclaimes for guiltie.
_Modesbargens_ flight assures him one, nor is
The pentionary of _Roterdam_ [169] _Grotius_,
Free from suspition: from _Utrecht_ I have brought
The Secretarie _Leidenberge_, who hath
Confest alredy something that will give us
Light to find out the rest. I would end here
And leave out _Barnavelt_.

_Bred_. If he be guiltie
He's to be nam'd and punishd with the rest.
_Vand_. Upon good evidence, but not till then
To be committed.

_Will_. 'Twer expedient
That something should be practisd to bring in
_Modesbargen_. Out of him the truth of all
May be wroong out.

_Bred_. The advice is sound and good.

_Vand_. But with much difficultie to be performd;
For how to force him out of _Germanie_
(Whether they say hee's fledd) without a war,
At least the breaking of that league we have
Concluded with them, I ingeniously
Confes my ignoraunce.

_Or_. Since you approve it,
Leave that to me.

_Enter Officer_ [170]

_Off_. My lord.

_Or_. Call in the Captaine
You saw me speake with at the dore.

_Off_. 'Tis don. [Exit_.

_Bred_. What does your Excellence ayme at?

_Or_. Have but patience,
You shall know sodainely.

_Enter Captaine_ [171]

_Cap_. My good Angell keepe me
And turne it to the best.--What am I sent for?

_Or_. You are wellcom, Captaine; nay 'tis for your good
That you are calld for. You are well acquainted
With all the parts of _Germanie_?

_Cap_. I have livd there.
Most of my time.

_Or_. But doe you know the Castle
Belonging to _Modesbargens_ Aunt or Cosen,--
Which 'tis I know not?

_Cap_. Very well, my Lord;
A pleasant Cuntry 'tis, and yeilds good hunting.

_Bred_. And that's a sport _Modesbargen_ from his youth
Was much inclind to.

_Or_. Wee'll make use of it.
It is of waight that you must undertake,
And does require your secrecie and care.
_Cap_. In both I wilbe faithfull.

_Or_. I beleeve you; And, to confirme it, with all possible speed
I would have you to post thether: from the Borders
Make choice of any horsemen you thinck fitt, And, when you come there, devide them into parties
And lodge neere to the Castle. Yf _Modesbargen_ Come forth to hunt, or if at any time
You find the draw-bridge up, break in upon him And willing or unwilling force him hether.
You shall have gold to furnish you, and this don Propose your owne rewards, they shalbe graunted.

_Cap_. Yf I be wanting let my head pay for it; Ile instantly about it.    _Exit_.

_Or_. Doe, and prosper.

_Will_. What will you do with _Leidenberge_?

_Bred_. Let him be
Kept safe a while: for _Barnavelt_, till we have
Some certayne proofes against him, I hold fitt
He have his libertie, but be suspended
From any place or voice in Court untill
His guilt or innocencc appeere.

_Vand_. I like it.

_Lords_. We are all of your opinion.

_Or_. Bring in _Leidenberch_.

_Enter Leidenberch, Boy, Guard_.

_Boy_. Doe all theis, father, wayt on you?

_Leid_. Yes, Boy.

_Boy_. Indeed I doe not like their Countenaunces; They looke as if they meant you litle good. Pray you, put them away.

_Leid_. Alas, poore innocent,
It is for thee I suffer; for my self
I have set up my rest.

_Or_. Now, Mounseiur _Leidenberch_,
We send not for you, though your fault deserve it, To load you with reprooфе, but to advise you To make use of the way we have found out To save your life and honour. You already, In free confession of your fault, have made A part of satisfaction; goe on in it, And you shall find a faire discovery Of youre fowle purposes and th'agents in 'em Will wyn more favour from theyr lordships to you
Then any obstinate denial can doe.

_Leid_. All that I know I will deliver to you, 
And beyond that your Excellence nor their Lordships 
Will not, I hope, perswade me.

_Vand_. In the meane time 
You are a prisoner.

_Boy_. Who? my father?

_Bred_. Yes, Boy.

_Boy_. Then I will be a prisoner, too. For heaven sake 
Let me goe with him, for theis naughtie men 
Will nere wayt on him well. I am usd to undresse him 
When he's to goe to bed, and then read to him 
Untill he be a sleepe, and then pray by him: 
I will not leave him.

_Bred_. Why, thou shalt not, Boy. 
Goe with thy father.

_Boy_. You are a good Lord, 
Indeed I love you for't and will pray for you. 
Come, father; now I must goe too, I care not. 
While I am with you, you shall have no hurt, 
Ile be your warrant.

_Leid_. I have lost myself, 
But something I shall doe.

[_Exeunt Leid., Boy, Guard_.

_Or_. 'Tis time to rise; 
And, if your Lordshipps please, we will defer 
Our other busines to an other sitting.

_Vand_. In the meane time wee'll use all honest meanes 
To sound the depth of this Confederacie, 
In which Heaven's hand direct us and assist us.

[_Exeunt_.

SCAENA 3.

_Enter 2 Captaines_.[172]

1 _Cap_. This is a strange cutting time.

2 _Cap_. Let 'em cutt deep enough, 
They will doe no great cure els. I wonder strangely 
They carry such a gentle hand on _Leidenberch_. 
That any frends come to him.

1 _Cap_. 'Has confess much,
Beleeve it, and so far they feare him not,
They would be els more circumspect.

2 _Cap_. Pray ye, tell me,
Is there no further newes of those are fledd,--
I meane those fellow Instruments?

1 _Cap_. None as yet,--
At least divulgd abroad. But certenly
The wise States are not idle, neither at this time
Do's it concerne their safeties. We shall heare shortly
More of theis monsters.

2 _Cap_. Let's to dynner, Sir;
There we shall heare more newes.

1 _Cap_. Ile beare ye companie.

[Exeunt_.

SCAENA 4.

_Enter Barnavelt & Provost_.

_Bar_. And how doth he take his imprisonment, _Mr. Provost_? 

_Pro_. A litle discontent, and't please your Lordship, 
And sad as men confind.

_Bar_. He does not talke much?

_Pro_. Little or nothing, Sir.

_Bar_. Nor wrighte?

_Pro_. Not any thing, 
Yet I have charge to give him those free uses.

_Bar_. Doe you keep him close?

_Pro_. Not so close, and't like your Lordship, 
But you may see and speake with him.

_Bar_. I thanck ye.

_Pro_. Pray ye give me leave; Ile send him to your Honour. 

[Exit_.

_Bar_. Now, _Barnavelt_, thou treadst the subtlest path, 
The hardest and the thorniest, most concerns thee, 
That ere thy carefull course of life run through:
The Master peece is now a foot, which if it speed
And take but that sure hold I ayme it at, 
I make no doubt but once more, like a Comet, 
To shine out faire and blaze prodigiously 
Even to the ruyn of those men that hate me.
_Enter Leidenberch_.

--I am sorry for your fortune.

_Leid_. 'Tis a sad one
And full of burthen, but I must learne to beare it.
How stands your State?

_Bar_. Upon a ball of yce
That I can neither fix, nor fall with safetie.

_Leid_. The heavie hand of heaven is now upon us
And we exposd, like bruizd and tottered vessells,
To merciles and cruell Seas to sinck us.

_Bar_. Our Indiscreations are our evill fortunes,
And nothing sincks us but [our] want of providence.
O you dealt coldly, Sir, and too too poorely,
Not like a man fitt to stem tides of dangers,
When you gave way to the Prince to enter _Utrecht_.
There was a blow, a full blow at our fortunes;
And that great indiscreation, that mayne blindnes,
In not providing such a constant Captaine,
One of our owne, to commaund the watch, but suffer
The haughtie _English_ to be masters of it,--
This was not well nor fitting such a wisdom,
Not provident.

_Leid_. I must confes my errour;
The beastly coldnes of the drowsy Burgers
Put me past all my aymes.

_Bar_. O, they are sweet Jewells!
He that would put his confidence in Turnops[173]
And pickled Spratts--Come, yet resume your Courage,
Pluck up that leaden hart and looke upon mee;
_Modesbargen's_ fledd, and what we lockt in him
Too far of from their subtle keys to open,
Yf we stand constant now to one another
And in our soules be true.

_Leid_. That comes too late, Sir,
Too late to be redeemd: as I am unfortunate
In all that's gone before, in this--

_Bar_. What?

_Leid_. O,
In this, this last and greatest--

_Bar_. Speake.

_Leid_. Most miserable.
I have confessed. Now let your eies shoot through me
And if there be a killing anger sinck me.

_Bar_. Confessd!
"Leid_. 'Tis done: this traitor tongue has don it,
This coward tongue.

"Bar_. Confessd!

"Leid_. He lookes me blind now.

"Bar_. How I could cursee thee, foole, despise thee, spurne thee,
But thou art a thing not worthie of mine anger.
A frend! a dog: a whore had byn more secret,
A common whore a closer Cabinet.
Confest! upon what safety, thou trembling asbyn,
Upon what hope? Is there ought left to buoy us
But our owne confidence? What frends now follow us,
That have the powre to strike of theis misfortunes,
But our owne constant harts? Where were my eies,
My understanding, when I tooke unto me
A fellow of thy falce hart for a frend?
Thy melting mind! foold with a few faire words
Suffer those secreats that concerne thy life,
In the Revealer not to be forgiven too,
To be pluckt from thy childes hart with a promise,
A nod, a smile! thyself and all thy fortunes
Through thy base feare made subject to example!
Nor will the shott stay there, but with full violence
Run through the rancke of frends, disperse and totter
The best and fairest hopes thy fame was built on.

"Leid_. What have I done, how am I foold and cozend!
What shall redeeme me from this Ignoraunce!

"Bar_. Not any thing thou aymst at, thou art lost:
A most unpittied way thou falst.

"Leid_. Not one hope
To bring me of? nothing reservd to cleere me
From this cold Ignoraunce?

"Bar_. But one way left,
But that thy base feare dares not let thee look on;
And that way will I take, though it seeme steepe
And every step stuck with affrights and horrours,
Yet on the end hangs smyling peace and honour,
And I will on.

"Leid_. Propound and take[174] me with ye.

"Bar_. Dye uncompelld, and mock their preparations,
Their enveys and their Justice.

"Leid_. Dye?

"Bar_. Dye willingly,
Dye sodoainely and bravely: So will I:
Then let 'em sift our Actions from our ashes.
I looke to-morrow to be drawne before 'em;
And doe you think, I, that have satt a Judge
And drawne the thred of life to what length I pleasd,
Will now appeare a Prisoner in the same place?
Tarry for such an ebb? No, _Leidenberch_.
The narrowest dore of death I would work through first
Ere I turne Slave to stick their gawdy triumphes.

_Leid_. Dye, did you say? dye wilfully?

_Bar_. Dye any way,
Dye in a dreame: he that first gave us honours
Allowes us also safe waies to preserve 'em,
To scape the hands of infamy and tirrany.
We may be our owne Justice: he that loses
His Creadit (deere as life) through doubt or faintness
Is guilty of a doble death, his name dies;
He is onely pious that preserves his heire
His honour when he's dead.

_Leid_. 'Tis no great paine.

_Bar_. 'Tis nothing:
Imagination onely makes it monstrous.
When we are sick we endure a hundred fitts,
This is but one; a hundred waies of torture,
And cry and howle, weary of all about us,
Our frends, allyes, our children teadious to us,
Even our best health is but still sufferaunce.
One blow, one short peece of an howre dos this,
And this cures all; maintaines no more phisitians,
Restores our memories, and there's the great cure,
Where, if we stay the fatall Sword of Justice,
It moawes the man downe first, and next his fashion,
His living name, his creadit.

_Leid_. Give me your hand, Sir;
You have put me in a path I will tread strongly;
Redeeme what I have lost, and that so nobely
The world shall yet confes at least I lovd ye.
How much I smile at now theis peoples mallice!
Dispise their subtle ends, laugh at their Justice!
And what a mightie Prince a constant man is!
How he can set his mind aloft, and looke at
The bussings and the busines of the spightfull,
And crosse when ere he please all their close weavings.
Farwell, my last farwell.

_Bar_. A long farwell, Sir.

_Leid_. Our bodies are the earthes, that's their dyvorsse:
But our immortall names shall twyn togeather.

_Bar_. Thus tread we backward to our graves;--but faint not.

_Leid_. Fooles onely fly their peace: thus I pursue it.

_[Exeunt_.

SCAENA 5.
Enter Grotius & Hogerbeets.

Grotius. They have arrested him, Hogerbeets?

Hogerbeets. Yes;
That you all know, Grotius, they did at Utrich,
But since they have with more severitie
And scorne of us proceeded. Monsieur Barnavelt
Walkes with a thousand eies and guards upon him,
And has at best a painted libertie;
Th'Appollogie he wroat so poorely raild at,
(For answreed at no part a man can call it)
And all his life and Actions so detracted,
That he, as I am certenly informed,
Lookes every howre for worsse.

Grotius. Come, come, they dare not,
Or if they should I will not suffer it;
I that have without dread ever maintaingd
The freedom I was borne to, against all
That ever have provoakd me, will not feare
What this old Grave or the new Prince of Orange
Dare undertake beyond this, but will rise up
And if he lay his hands on Barnavelt,
His Court, our Guift, and where the generall States
Our equalls sit ile fry about their eares
And quench it in their blood. What now I speake
Againe ile speake aloud; let who will tell it,
I never will fly from it.

Hogerbeets. What you purpose
I will not fly from.

Grotius. Back you then to Leyden,
Ile keep at Roterdam: there if he fetch me
Ile nere repent whatever can fall on me.

Exeunt.

SCAENA 6.

Enter Leidenberch & Boy.

Boy. Shall I help you to bed, Sir,
[_Taper, pen & inke: Table_.

Leidenberch. No, my Boy, not yet.

Boy. 'Tis late and I grow sleepie.

Leidenberch. Goe to bed then,
For I must wryte, my Childe.

Boy. I had rather watch, Sir,
If you sitt up, for I know you will wake me.
_Leid_. Indeed I will not; goe, I have much to doe; Prethee to bed; I will not waken thee.

_Boy_. Pray, Sir, leave wryting till to morrow.

_Leid_. Why, Boy?

_Boy_. You slept but ill last night, and talkd in your sleep, too; Tumbled and tooke no rest.

_Leid_. I ever doe soe. Good Boy, to bed; my busines is of waigbt And must not be deferrd: good night, sweet Boy.

_Boy_. My father was not wont to be so kind To hug me and to kisse me soe.

_Leid_. Why do'st thou weep?

_Boy_. I cannot tell, but sure a tendernes, Whether it be with your kind words unto me Or what it is, has crept about my hart, Sir, And such a sodaine heavynes withall, too.

_Leid_.--Thou bringst fitt mourners for my funerall.

_Boy_. But why do you weep, father?

_Leid_. O, my Boy, Thy teares are dew-drops, sweet as those on roses, But mine the faint and yron sweatt of sorrow. Prethee, sweet Child, to bed; good rest dwell with thee, And heaven returne a blessing: that's my good Boy. —Exit boy—

—How nature rises now and turns me woman When most I should be man! Sweet hart, farewell, Farewell for ever. When we get us children We then doe give our freedoms up to fortune And loose that native courage we are borne to. To dye were nothing,—simply to leave the light; No more then going to our beds and sleeping; But to leave all these dearnesses behind us, These figures of our selves that we call blessings, Is that which trobles. Can man beget a thing That shalbe deerer then himself unto him? --Tush, _Leidenberch_: thinck what thou art to doe; Not to play _Niobe_ weeping ore her Children, Unles that _Barnavelt_ appeere againe And chide thy dull-cold nature.--He is fast: —Son abed— Sleepe on, sweet Child, the whilst thy wretched father Prepares him to the yron sleepe of death. Or is death fabled out but terrable To fright us from it? or rather is there not Some hid _Hesperides_, some blessed fruites Moated about with death. Thou soule of _Cato_, And you brave _Romaine_ speritts, famous more For your true resolutions on yourselves Then Conquest of the world, behold, and see me An old man and a gowne man, with as much hast
And gladnes entertaine this steele that meetes me
As ever longing lover did his mistris.
--So, so; yet further; soe.

_Boy within_. Oh!

_Leid_. Sure the Boy wakes
And I shalbe prevented.

_Boy_. Now heaven blesse me.
O me, O me!

_Leid_. He dreames and starts with frightings.
I bleed apace but cannot fall: tis here;
This will make wider roome. Sleep, gentle Child,
And do not looke upon thy bloody father,
Nor more remember him then fitts thy fortune.
--Now shoot your spightes, now clap on all your councells;
Here is a constant frend will not betray me.
I, now I faint; mine eies begin to hunt
For that they have lost for ever, this worldes beutie--
O oh, o oh! my long sleepe now has ceizd me.

_Enter Boy_.

_Boy_. I heard him groane and cry; I heard him fall sure.
O, there he lyes in his owne blood! o father,
O my deare father, dead and bequeathd no blessing!
Why did I goe to bed, why was I heavy?
O, I will never sleep againe. The house there!
You that are verteous rise! you that have fathers!
Ho, Master _Provost_! o my deerest father.
Some Surgeons, Surgeons!

_Enter Provost & Servts_.

_Prov_. 'Twas the Boyes voice, certaine.

_Ser_. What bloody sight is this? 'has killd himself:
Dead, stone-cold dead; he needs no art of Surgeons.

_Prov_. Take of the Boy.

_Boy_. O let me dwell here ever.

_Prov_. This was a fatall stroak, to me a heavy,
For my remissnes wilbe loaden with it.
Bring in the Boy; ile to the State instantly;
Examine all the wounds and keep the knives;
The Boy fast too,--may be he knowes some circumstance.

_Boy_. O that I never knew againe.

_Prov_. In with it.

[Exeunt_.}
Actus Quartus.

SCAENA PRIMA.

_Enter Captaine[176] and Soldiers_.

_Cap_. Are the Horses left where I appointed 'em, And all the Soldiers ready?

_Sold_. They are all, Captaine.

_Cap_. 'Tis well: _Modesbargen_ is abroad, for certaine, Hunting this morning.

_Sold_. Tis most likely, Sir; For round about the Castle, since the dawning, We have heard the merry noyse of hornes.

_Cap_. Dispeirce then, Except some three or foure to watch the Castle Least he break in againe. What Company Have ye discoverd that attends him?

_Sold_. Few, Sir: I do not thinck he has five within the fort now Able to make resistaunce.

_Cap_. Let 'em be twenty We are strong enough to fright 'em; and by all meanes Let those that stay seek by some trick or other To make the Bridge good, that they draw it not If he returne upon us.

_Sold_. With all care, Sir.

_Exeunt.--Hornes_.

_Enter Modes-bargen & Huntsmen_[177].

_Mod_. The doggs have hunted well this dewy morning, And made a merry cry.

_1_Hunt_. The Hare was rotten[178]; You should have heard els such a rore, and seene 'em Make all hir dobles out with such neat hunting And run at such a merry rate togeather, They should have dapled ore your bay with fome, Sir.

_Mod_. 'Tis very well, and so well I affect it That I could wish I had nere hunted after Any delight but this, nor sought more honour. This is securely safe, drawes on no danger, Nor is this Chace crost with malignant envy. How sweatly do I live and laugh upon The perrills I have past, the plotts and traynes! And now (methincks) I dare securely looke on The steepe and desprat follyes my indiscretion Like a blind careles foole had allmost cast me on.
Here I stand saffe 'gainst all their strengths and Stratagems:
I was a boy, a foole to follow _Barnavelt_,
To step into his attempts, to wedd my freedom
To his most dangerous faction, a meere Coxcomb;
But I have scapd their clawes.--Have ye found more game?

_Enter 2 Huntesmen_[179].

2 _Hunt_. Beating about to find a new Hare, we discoverd--

_Mod_. Discoverd what?

2 _Hunt_. Horsemen, and't please ye, Sir,
Scowt round about us, and which way still the doggs went
They made up within view.

_Mod_. Look't they like Soldiers?

2 _Hunt_. For certayne they are Soldiers; for if theis are eyes
I saw their pistolls.

_Mod_. Many?

2 _Hunt_. Some half a score, Sir.

_Mod_. I am betraide: away and raise the Boores up,
Bid 'em deale manfully.

1 _Hunt_. Take a close way home
And clap your spurres on roundly.

_Mod_. No place safe for me!
This Prince has long armes, and his kindled anger
A thousand eyes--Make hast and raise the Cuntry.

[Exeunt_.

_Enter Captn & Soldiers_.

_Cap_. This was a narrow scape; he was ith' feild, sure.

_Sold_. Yes, that was certayne he that ridd of by us,
When we stood close ith' brakes.

_Cap_. A devill take it!
How are we cozend! pox of our goodly providence!
If he get home or if the Cuntry know it!

_Sold_. Make haste, he is yet unmand: we may come time enough
To enter with him. Besides there's this advantage:
They that are left behind, instead of helping
A Boores Cart ore the Bridge, loden with hay,
Have crackt the ax-tree with a trick, and there it stands
And choakes the Bridge from drawing.

_Cap_. There's some hope yet.
Away and clap on spurs: he shall scape hardly
If none of us salute him. Mounte, mounte.
Exeunt.

Enter Modesbargen & Huntesmen.

Mod. Hell take this hay! 'tis set on purpose here: Fire it and draw the Bridge: clap faggotts on't And fire the Cart and all. No Boores come in yet? Where be your Musketts, Slaves?

Hunt. We have no powder, Sir.

Mod. You have sold me, Rogues, betrayd me: fire the Cart, I say, Or heave it into th' Moat.

Hunt. We have not men enough. Will ye goe in? the Cuntry will rise presently, And then you shall see, Sir, how wee'll bucke with 'em.

Mod. I see I am undon: the hay choakes all, I cannot get beside it.

Enter Captaine & Soldiers.

Cap. Stir not a foote, For he that do's has mett his preist. Goe, ceize his body, But hurt him not. You must along with us, Sir: We have an easie nag will swym away with ye,-- You ghesse the cause, I am sure. When you are ith' saddle once, Let your Boores loose; we'll show 'em such a baste. Do not deiect yourself nor rayle at fortune; They are no helpes: thincke what you have to answear.

Mod. Captaine, within this Castle in ready coyne I have a thousand ducketts: doe me one curtesie, It shalbe brought out presently.

Cap. What is it? For I have use of money.

Mod. Doe but shoot me, Clap both your Pistolls into me.

Cap. No, I thanck ye, I know a trick worth ten o'that: ile love ye And bring ye to those men that love to see ye. Away, away; and keepe your pistolls spand still: We may be forced.

Mod. I am undon for ever.

Exeunt.

SCAENA 2.

Enter Orange, Bredero, Vandort.
_Bred_. Is't possible he should be so far tempted[181]  
To kill himself?

_Vand_. 'Has don it and most desperately,  
Nor could strong nature stay his hand,—his owne Child  
That slept beside him: which showes him guilty, lords,  
More then we suspected.

_Or_. 'Tis to be feard soe  
And therefore, howsoere I movd your lordships  
To a mild and sweet proceeding in this busines,  
That nothing might be construde in't malitious  
And make the world believe our owne ends wrought it,  
Now it concerns ye to put on more strictnes  
And with severer eyes to looke into it:  
Ye robb yourselves of your owne rightes els, Justice,  
And loose those pious names your Cuntries safeties.  
And sodainely this must be don and constantly:  
The powrs ye hold els wilbe scornd & laughd at,  
And theis unchristian stroakes be laid to your charge.

_Bred_. Your Grace goes right; but with what generall safetie  
(For ther's the mayne point), if we proceed severely  
May this be don? We all know how much followed  
And with what swarmes of love this Mounsieur _Barnavelt_  
Is courted all the Cuntry over. Besides, at _Leyden_  
We heare how _Hogerbeets_ behaves himself,  
And how he stirrs the peoples harts against us.  
And _Grotius_ has byn heard to say, and openly,  
(A man of no meane mark nor to be slighted)  
That if we durst imprison _Barnavelt_.  
He would fire the Court and State-house, and that Sacrifice  
He would make more glorious with your blood and ours, Sir.

_Vand_. All angers are not armd; the lowdest Channell  
Runs shallowest, and there betrayes his weaknes:  
The deep & silent man threatens the danger.

_Or_. If they had equall powre to man their wills  
And hope, to fling their miseries upon us,  
I that nere feard an Army in the feild,  
A body of most choice and excellent Soldiers  
And led by Captaines honourd for experience:  
Can I feare them or shake at their poore whispers?  
I that have broke the beds of Mutenies  
And bowde againe to faire obedience  
Those stubborne necks that burst the raynes of order,  
Shall I shrinck now and fall, shot with a rumour?  
No, my good Lords, those vollyes never fright me;  
Yet, not to seeme remisses or sleep secure here,  
I have taken order to prevent their angers;  
I have sent Patents[182] out for the choicest Companies  
Hether to be remov'd: first, Collonell _Veres._  
From _Dort_; next Sir _Charles Morgans_, a stowt Company;  
And last my Cosens, the Count _Ernests_ Company:  
With theis I doubt not to make good our busines;  
They shall not find us babes.

_Bred_. You are nobely provident.
_Vand_. And now proceed when it please you, and what you thinck fit
We shall subscribe to all.

_Or_. I thanck your Honours.
Call in the Captaine of my Guard.

_Serv_. Hee's here, Sir.

_Enter Captaine_.

_Or_. Harck in your eare.

_Cap_. I shall, Sir.

_Or_. Doe it wisely
And without tumult.

_Cap_. I observe your Grace.

_Or_. Now take your rest, my lords: for what care followes
Leave it to me.

_All_. We wish it all succes, Sir.

_[Exeunt_.

SCAENA 3.

_Enter Barnavelt (in his studdy)_.

_Bar_. This from the King of _Fraunce_, of much importance,
And this from _Englands_ Queene, both mightie Princes
And of immortall memories: here the Rewards sett,--
They lou'd me both. The King of _Swechland_ this,
About a Truyce; his bounty, too. What's this?
From the Elector Palatine of _Brandenburge_,
To doe him faire and acceptable offices:
I did so; a rich iewell and a chaine he sent me.
The Count of _Solems_, and this from his faire Countess
About compounding of a busines:
I did it and I had their thancks. Count _Bentham_,
The Archbishop of _Cullen_, Duke of _Brunswick_,
Grave _Embden_: theis from Citties, theis from Provinces;
Petitions theis; theis from the States for places.
Have I held correspondence with theis Princes,
And had their loves, the molding of their busines,
Trusted with their most secreat purposes?
Of every State acquainted with the misteries?
And must I stick here now, stick unreleevd, too?
Must all theis glories vanish into darknes,
And _Barnavelt_ passe with 'em and glide away
Like a spent exhalation? I cannot hold;
I am crackt too deepe alredy. What have I don
I cannot answear? Foole! remember not
Fame has too many eares and eyes to find thee!
What help, o miserable man? none left thee.
What constant frends? 'tis now a cryme to know thee
... ... ... be death.

_Enter Servant_.

_Serv_. My Lady would entreat, Sir--

_Bar_. My head? What art thou? from whom sent?

_Serv_. Heaven blesse me!

_Bar_. Are they so greedy of my blood?--O, pardon me:
I know thee now; thou art my honest Servant.
What would thy Lady?

_Serv_. Your Company to supper, Sir.

_Bar_. I cannot eate; I am full alredy, tell hir;
Bid hir sitt downe: full, full, too full.    [Exit Serv_.

My thancks
Poyzd equally with those faire services
I have done the States, I should walk confidently
Upon this high-straind danger. O, this end swayes me,
A heavy bad opinion is fixt here
That pulls me of; and I must downe for ever.

_Enter Daughter_[183]

_Daught_. Sir, will it please ye--

_Bar_. Ha!

_Daught_. Will it please ye, Sir--

_Bar_. Please me! what please me?--that I send thee, Girle,
To some of my great Masters to beg for me.
Didst thou meane so?

_Daught_. I meane, Sir--

_Bar_. Thou art too charitable
To prostitute thy beutie to releeve me;
With thy soft kisses to redeeme from fetters
The stubborne fortune of thy wretched father.

_Daught_. I understand ye not.

_Bar_. I hope thou do'st not.

_Daught_. My Lady Mother, Sir--

_Bar_. Prethee, good Girle,
Be not so cruell to thy aged father
To somme up all his miseries before him.

_Daught_. I come, Sir, to entreat your Company.

_Bar_. I am not alone.
_Daught_. My Mother will not eate, Sir.
--What fitt is this!

_Bar_. There can be no attonement:
I know the Prince: _Vandort_ is fleshd upon me,
And _Bredero_, though he be of noble nature,
Dare not step in. Wher's my Son _William_?
His Goverment is gon, too; and the Soldier,
O, the falce Soldier! What! wouldst thou have a husband?
Goe, marry an English Captaine, and hee'll teach thee
How to defy thy father and his fortune.--
I cannot eate; I have no stomach, Girle.

_Daught_. Good Sir, be patient.

_Bar_. No news from _Grotius_?
No flow of frends there? _Hoger-beets_ lye still, too?
--Away: ile come anon.

_Daught_. Now heaven preserve ye!    
__Exit__.

_Bar_. A gentle Girle: why should not I pray, too?
I had nere more need. When I am sett and gon,
What understanding can they stick up then
To fill the place I bore? None, not a man:
To traffick with Great Princes? none: to deale
With all the trobles of the war? None, certaine, no man:
To bring in daylie treasure? I know no man;
They cannot pick a man made up to serve 'em.
Why should I feare then? doubt, and fly before
Myne owne weake thoughts?--Art thou there, too?

__Enter Wife[184] and Daughter__.

_Wife_. Fy, fy, Sir:
Why do you suffer theis sad dead retirements
To choake your speritts? You have studied long enough
To serve the uses of those men that scorne ye;
'Tis time you take your ease now.

_Bar_. I shall shortly;
An everlasting ease, I hope.

_Wife_. Why weep ye,
My deere Sir? speak.

_Bar_. Never till now unhappie!
Thy fruit there and my fall ripen togeather
And fortune gives me heires of my disgraces.

_Wife_. Take nobler thoughts.

_Bar_. What will becom of thee, Wiffe,
When I am gon? When they have gorgd their envies
With what I have, what honest hand in pitty
Will powre out to thy wants? What noble eye
Will looke upon my Children strooke with miserie
And say 'you had a father that I honourd;
For his sake be my Brothers and my Sisters.'

_Wife_. There cannot be such crueltie.

_Bar_. I hope not; Yet what so confident Sailour that heares the Sea rore, The winds sing lowd and dreadfull, the day darkend, But he will cry 'a storme'! downe with his Canvas And hull, expecting of that horrid feavour?

_Enter Son_.

--How now? What newes?

_Son_. Plucke up your hart, Sir, fairely And wither not away thus poorely from us; Be now secure: the myst ye feard is vanishd,-- _Leidenberch's_ dead.

_Bar_. Dead?

_Son_. Killd himself; his owne hand Most bravely was his Justice; nor left behind him One peece of paper to dishonour ye. They are all to seeke now for their Accusations.

_Bar_. And is he dead? so timely, too? so truly? Speak't againe, _Will_?

_Son_. Hee's dead, Sir, if I live here.

_Bar_. And his owne hand?

_Son_. His hand and will performd it.

_Bar_. Give me some wyne. I find now, notwithstanding

_Enter Servant with wine_.

The opposition of those mindes that hate me, A wise-man spyns his owne fate and secures it. Nor can I, that have powre to perswade men dye, Want living frends to iustifie my Creadit. Goe in and get me meat now; invyte my frends, I am determind to be high and merry. Thou hast lost thy Charge; wee'll have another, _Will_; It shall goe hard els. The Prince of _Orange_ now Will find what frends I have, and of what reckning; And when he seekes this life, he must make passage Through thousands more and those he little dreames of.

_Son_. I wonder how he got that speritt, Sir, to dye soe?

_Bar_. He was a weak man, indeed, but he has redeemd it: There be some other I could wish of his mind. Do'st thinck they dare doe any thing now.

_Son_. 'Troth, I thinck not, Sir.

_Bar_. No, Boy, I warrant thee; they make great soundes, But mark what followes. Prethee, let's be merry,
I want it much.

_Son_. I am glad to see you so, Sir.

_Enter Servant_.

_Bar_. I cannot be above two daies from Councell, I know their wants. How now, what haste?

_Serv_. O, Sir, ye are undon; We have lost ye.

_Bar_. Ha!

_Serv_. For ever lost ye.

_Bar_. Why?

[_Serv._] The Captaine of the Guard, the Princes Captaine--

_Bar_. Where? how?

_Enter Wife & Daughter_.

_Serv_. Is broken in now upon us.

_Wife_. He will not be denyde. O, my deare Husband! The cruell Princes Captaine!

[_Captaine within_.

_Cap_. Ope the dore; Wee'll force it els, and all that dare resist us Wee'll put to th'Sword.

_Bar_. Open the dore: farewell, Wiffe; Goe to the French Embassadour presently; There's all my hope. To him make knowne my misery, Wooe him with teares, with praires: this kisse; be happie.

_Wife_. O, we shall never see ye more!

[_Exeunt Wife and Daughter_.

_Enter Captaine & others_.

_Bar_. Away!-- You Instrument of blood, why doe ye seeke us? I have knowne the day you have wayted like a suppliant And those knees bended as I past. Is there no reverence Belonging to me left now, that like a Ruffian Rudely ye force my lodgings? No punishment Due to a cryme of that fowle nature?

_Cap_. You must pardon me, I have commission, Sir, for what I offer, And from those men that are your Masters, too; At least you'll find 'em soe. You must shift your lodging, And presently: I have a charge to see ye
Yeild yourself quietly.

_Bar_. Goe and tell their Lordships
I will attend to-morrow. I know my time
And how to meet their mallice without guards.
This is the Prince, the cruell Prince your Master,
The thirstie Prince of this poore Life.

_Cap_. Be not vext;
That will not help ye, Sir.

_Bar_. I wilbe vext,
And such an anger I will fling amongst 'em
Shall shake the servile soules of these poore wretches
That stick his slight deservings above mine.
I charge ye draw your Guard off and disperce 'em:
I have a powre as full as theirs.

_Cap_. You'll find not;
And I must have ye with me.

_Bar_. And am I subiect
That have stood the brunt of all their busines,
And when they slept watcht to secure their slombers,--
Subiect to slights, to scernes, to taynts, to tortures?
To feed one privat mallice am I betrayd?
Myne age, myne honour and my honest dealing
Sold to the hangmans Sword?

_Cap_. I cannot stay.

_Bar_. Take me
And glory in my blood, you most ungratefull;
Feed your long bloody hopes and bath your angers
In _Barnavelts_ deservings; share my Services;
Let it be death to pity me; to speak well of me,
The ruyn of whole famylies. When I am gon
And angry war againe shall ceize your Cuntry,
Too late remember then and cursse your follyes.
--I am ready. Farwell, Son; remember me
But not my fortune; let them cry that shall want me.

_Cap_. No man come neere on paine of death: away with him.

[_Exeunt_.

SCAENA 4.

_Enter Orange & 1 Captaine_.[185]

_Cap_. And as I told your Highnes, so wee tooke him.

_Or_. 'Twas with discretion and valour followd.
You were not noted as you made entraunce
Into the _Hague_?
No, Sir; 'twas about midnight,
And few were stirring but the Guard.

The better.
Let his being brought in be still conceal'd, and tell him
If uncomplied he will confess the truth
At _Barnavelts_ Arraignment, that all favour
That I can win him shall prepare a way
To qualify his fault.

I'll work him to it
And doubt not.

_Enter Burgers & Women with bowghs & flowres._

'Tis Kramis[186]-time,
In which it is a custom with the people
To deck their doors with Garlands, Bowghes, and flowers
That are most gracious.

I remember.
--Stand close.

_Burg_. Strew, strew: more Garlands and more flowers.
Up with the Bowghes! Sacrament, I will have
My noble friends house, Mounseur _Barnavelts_,
As well decked as his Excellencies Court,
For though they have got him in prison he deserves
As well as any.

Mark you that.

'Tis said
They will cut off his head.

Much![187] with a Cusshin!
They know he has too many friends.

They dare not.
People will talk: I hope ere long to see him
As great as ever.

Greater too, I doubt not,
And of more power; his feet upon the necks
Of all his Enemies.

I am glad I heard this;
And _Barnavelt_ shall feel I will make use oft.
Come; follow me.

__Exeunt__.

So, now the merry Song
We made for his good Lady. Lustique,[188] hoa!

_[Song._

All thank you, kind friends, that a sad house can give ye
Pray you receive; for I rest well assur'd,
Though these sports are unseasonable here,
They testify your loves; and, if my Lord
Ere live to be himself again, I know
He will remember it.

1 _Burg_. Now for the Dance, Boyes.

_Wife_. There's something for your paines: drinck it, I pray.

2 _Burg_. To a doyt, my vroa, to thy Lords health and thyne.
The Bree[189] for his Excellencie and the Heeres
That love him not. Ten hundred thousand blessings
To him and thee, my vroa.

_Daunce_.

_Wife_. I thanck you, frend.

_Exeunt_.

SCAENA 5.

_Enter Orange, Bredero, Vandort, William, Lords.

[Table_.

_Vand_. Let him be sent for presently: he shall know,

_A Bar brought in_.

Were he ten times more popular, his frends
And flatterers Centuple, the Sword of Justice
Shall fall on him as on the meanest man
Since he deserves it.

_Enter Provost, Captaines & Guard with Barnavelt_.

_Pro_. Make roome for the Prisoner.

_Bar_. My dutie to your Highnes and theis Princes
And an increase of wisdome to your Lordships,
For which the world admires you, I wish to you.
Alas, what troble do's a weake old man,
(That is, being out of all imployment, useles)
The bag of his deserts, too, cast behind you,
Impose upon this Senat? My poore life
(Which others envy makes your Instruments
To fight against) will hardly be a Conquest
Worthie such great performers.

_Vand_. Mounseiur _Barnavelt_,
'Tis no mans envy that hath brought us hether
To sitt as Judges on you, but your owne.
Your owne late actions they have raisd a war
Against your former merritts, and defeated
What ever then was ranckt for good and great,
For which your Enemies, those that you thought frends,
Triumph, not wee.

_Bre_. We rather wish you could
Acquitt yourself of that for which we have
Too evident proofes, then labour to intrap you.

_Bar_. I must beleeve and suffer whatsoever
Your Lordships charge me with: yet would gladly heare
What my faultes are.

_Vand_. Read the Confessions
Of _Leidenberch_ and _Taurinus_.

_Bar_. _Leidenberch_!

_Officer reads_. First, that the _Arminian_ faction (of which Sir _John
Van Olden Barnavelt_, late Advocate of _Holland_ and _West Frizeland_
and Councellor of State, was without contradiction the head) had
resolved and agreed to renounce and break the generallity and unitie
of the State.

Secondly, Change and alter the Religion, and to that end, without the
Consent of the Generall States, had rayesed up and dispeirsed 3000
Arminian Soldiers.

Thirdly, To degrade the Prince of _Orange_.

Fourthly, To massacre the people of the Townes which were their greatest
Enemies or offered resistaunce.

Fiftly, yf that fayled, to take in assistaunce of some forreigne
Potentates, as _Spaine_ or _Brabant_, delivering unto them _Utricht,
Nunweghen, Bergen op Zone_, and the _Brill_.

_Bar_. And that, with others, this was _Barnavelts_ purpose?
For so your Lordships take it.

_Bred_. With good reason.

_Vand_. Too many and strong proofes invyting us
To creadit it.

_Bar_. Yf you will have them such,
All truth I can bring to dyvert your Lordships
From your determinate opinion that way
Will not remove them. Yet 'tis strange that man
Should labour to devide those Generall States
That had no weak hand in unyting them,--
That _Barnavelt_ (a name you have remembered
When you have thought by whom you were mad happie)--
That _Barnavelt_ (alowd I dare repeat it),
Who, when there was Combustion in the State,
Your Excellence, Grave _William_ and Count _Henrie_,
Taking instructions for your Commaunds
From one that then ruld all; the Provinces
Refucing to bring in their Contributions
And arguing whether the West _Frizelander_
And _Hollander_ had powre to raise such Tribut,
When many of the Governours stood ill
Affected to you, all our Garrisons
Not sworne then to the Generall States but others,
Which the promiscuous multitude gladly followed:
When _Graves_ and _Vendloe_ were held by the _Spaniard_
And _Nunweghen_ with violence assaulted,
Confusion with one greedy gripe being ready
To seaze on all; then when the _Sluice_ was lost
And all in muteny at _Midleborough_
Who then rose up or durst step in before me
To doe these Cuntries service? Who then labourd
More then the now suspected _Barnavelt_
T'appease seditions and compound all Quarrells?
Who pacified the Malcontents? Who taught you
To stand upon your Guards and trust yourselves?
O, you forgetfull, all this I performd
And in the golden fagot of faire Concord
Bound safely up those strengthes which Mutenies,
Corruption and homebred Traitors scatterd.

_Vand_. This is a point you often choose to treat of,
And yet some part of theis good services
None will deny you.

_Or_. But to ingrosse all
Would argue me your ward, should I give way too't,
And these grave Lords your Schollers.

_Bar_. In the Art
Of Goverment they scornd not once to be soe,
Nor you to give me hearing: and if ever
'Twer lawful th' unthanckfull men t'upbraid
Unequall benefitts, let it not in me
Be now held glorious if I speake my best.
I have five times in regall Embassies
Byn sent the principall Agent for theis Cuntries,
And for your good have spoken face to face
With mightie Kings: twyce with that virgin Queene,
Our Patronesse of happie memory,
_Elizabeth_ of _England_; twyce in _Fraunce_
With that invincible King that worthely
(Though dead) is still'd the _Great, Henry_ the _fourth_
Once with the King of _Britaine_ that now is:
Yet let my greatest Enemy name the least
Of theis so high Imployments in which I
Treated without advantage, and returnd not
With proffitt, as with honour, to my Cuntry,
And let me fall beneath the worst aspersion
His mallice can throw on me. Besides Soldiers
So often levied by my meanes for you,
Which to particularize were teadious,
Two millions and five hundred thousand pounds,
For which the Provinces stood bound, I wrought
Freely to be dischargd; the Townes they pawnd
To be deliverd up; and after all
Theis meritorious and prosperous travells
T'unyte theis States, can _Barnavelt_ be suspected
To be the authour to undoe that knot
Which with such toyle he fastend[190].

_Or_. Pawse, I beseech you,
And while you gather breath to fill the Trumpet
Of your deserts give me leave to deliver
A little for the States and mine owne honour.
We have heard a glorious Catalogue of your vertues
But not one vice or slip of yours rememberd;
But I will help your memory:—who was he
That gave intelligence of my sodaine comming
To surprize _Antwerpe_? They that brought the Letters
Were knowne and but from you could have no notice
Of any such design. Who hinderd me
From rescuing of _Rheinberch_ in the last Seige?
Who warranted the yeilding of it up
Without necessitie to the Governour?
Who was the cause no greater powre was sent
Against the Enemie when he past the Rhine
And tooke the Townes of _Oldensell, Lingen, Groll_?
To think of this would give a little vent
To the windy bladder of your vanitie
Which you have blowne to an unlymited vastnes.
Your Insolence to me before the Battaile
Of _Flaunders_ I forget[191].—
Call in _Modesbargen_.

_Or_. Ha! do's that startle you?
_Or_. You shall heare more.

Modesb_. O, Mounseiur _Barnavelt_, do we meet thus?
I am as sorry to behold you there
As know myself a Prisoner. Now you perceive
To what a desperate state your headlong Counsells
And rash designes have brought us: to stand out now
Were to no purpose, for, alas, they have
Too pregnant prooffes against us.

_Or_. You that feele
The horrour of fowle guilt in your falce bosom
Confes yourself soe; my strong Innocence
To the death stands constant.

_Or_. Take _Modesbargen_ in.

[_Exit Cap. and Modesb_.]

_Vand_. This is an impudence I never read of.
But now wee'll show thee, miserable man,
Such further prooffes as would call up a blush
Upon the devills cheeke. Looke upon this,
Signd by the Governor, Chauncellor and Counsell
Of _Gilderland_ and _Zutphen_, who here name thee
The roote and head of the late Schisme.

_Bred_. And this
Sent from the Lords of _Utrecht_, where 'tis prov'd
That the new Companies were raised by you,
And to what purpose.

_William_. To subvert Religion,
To deface Justice and to break the union
And holy League between the _Provinces_.

_[Henry.][193] The Proclamations are allowed by you
Sent forth against the Protestants; and here
Your resolution to degrade my Brother
And then dispose of him as you thought fit._

_Vand_. Your plot here to withdraw all the old Soldiers
From the Commandment of the States, and win them
To serve for your ends in a Civil war.

_Bred_. To raise up Citizen against Citizen,
Stranger against stranger, Soldier against Soldier,
And Maiestates against the Maiestates.

_Or_. To waste the Land within that with less danger
The foreign Enemy might make his entrance.
Yf then this be not treacherie beyond
All presidents of Traitors--

_Bar_. Give me Leave
Onely to smile, then say all these are false,
Your witnesses subord, your testimonies
And writings forg'd, and this elaborate forme
Of Justice to delude the world a cover
For future practises: this I affirm.
Upon my soule[194]. Now when you please condemn me:
I will not use one syllable for your mercy
To have mine age renewed and once again
To see a second triumph of my glories.
You rise, and I grow tedious; let me take
My farewell of you yet, and at the place
Where I have oft byn heard; and, as my life
Was ever fertile of good counsels for you,
It shall not be in the last moment barren.

_Octavius_[195], when he did affect the Empire
And strove to tread upon the neck of _Rome_
And all her ancient freedoms, tooke that course[196]
That now is practisd on you; for the _Catos_
And all free spirits slain or els proscribd
That durst have stir'd against him, he then sceaasd
The absolute rule of all. You can apply this[197]:
And here I prophesie I, that have lyvd
And dye a free man, shall when I am ashes
Be sensible of your groans and wishes for me;
And when too late you see this Government
Changd to a Monarchie[198] you'll howle in vain
And wish you had a _Barnavelt_ againe.
Now lead me where you will: a speedy Sentence:
I am ready for it and 'tis all I ask you.

_[Exeunt_.}
_Actus Quintus_.

SCAENA PRIMA.

_Enter Wife, Daughter, Servant with Peares_.

_Wife_. Denyde to see my Husband! o you Tirants! And (to increase my misery) in vaine By heaven I kneeld for't, wept and kneeld in vaine To such as would, while _Barnavelt_ was himself-- But why do I remember that word 'was,' That never happie word of 'was.'

_Serv_. Good Madam, Beare (with your usuall wisdom) what is not In you to help. The strict guard's kept upon him; His State ceizd on; my Lord your Son disgracd, too, And all your frends suspected, may assure you No price beneath his head must answeare for him.

_Daughter_. But is he not alredy dead?

_Wife_. I, I, There lyes my feare.

_Serv_. I sweare to you I saw him Not many howres since, and hundreds more; But yet, as one that's bound to honour him, I had rather have had assuraunce of his death Than so to have seen him.

_Both_. Why?

_Serv_. I have followd him When every step he made met a Petition, And these, that are his Judges now, like Clyents Have wayted on him. The whole Court attended When he was pleas'd to speake, and, with such murmours As glad Spectators in a Theater Grace their best Actors with, they ever heard him; When to have had a sight of him was held A prosperous omen; when no eye gazd on him That was not filld with admiration, not As now with scorne or pitty. His rude Guard, For prooufe that they contempne all such as ayme Or hope for his release (as if he were Some prodigie or monster), each night show him To such as greive his fortune, which must be To him worse then ten thousand deaths made horrid With all the actes of Crueltie.

_Daught_. I have hope yet To see an alteration.

_Wife_. My good Servant, He has some frends left yet and powerfull ones
That can doe more then weepe for him as we doe;
Those I will strayt sollicite. In the meane time,
That to his comfort he may know so much,
Endeavour thou to have this simple present
As from thy self sent to him.

_Serv_. I will hazard
All that can fall upon me to effect it.

_Exeunt[199] Wife and Daughter_.

_Enter Provost & Guard_.

_Pro_. What makes this fellow here? Whether would ye, Sir?

_Serv_. Sir, to desire accesse unto my Lord
Were to ask that I know must be denide,
And therefore I forbeare it; but intreating
What cannot wrong you in the graunt, I hope
To find you curteous.

_Pro_. What's the Suit?

_Serv_. This onely:
My Lord, your prisoner, for my service gave me
A poore house with an Orchard in the Counry.
The fruites of which he did not scorne to taste of
In th'height of his prosperitie; but of all
That pleas'd his pallat there was one faire tree,
On which theis Peares grew, which by his appointment
Were still reservd for him, and as a Rent
Due for my Living I stood bound to tender.
Theis, yf you please, the last I shall pay to him,
I would present him with, by what Attorney
Your goodnes shall prescribe me.

_Pro_. They are faire Peares,
Exceeding faire ones: ile make bold with one,
The rest beare to him.

_Serv_. [aside[200]] All wilbe discoverd,
I am glad I am got off, yet. [_Exit_.

_Enter Provosts Wife_[201].

_Pro_. What make you here?
Do you come to traille a pike or use a Musket?

_Wife_. For neither, Sir; I came to see you.

_Pro_. Home!
This is no place for women. To your Gossips!
This burthen would become a Chamber better.

_Wife_. 'Tis a faire Peare.

_Pro_. You long for't: pray you take it,
You are priviledgd now to beg.--Ha! charmes in't? stay,
Give mee't. I would not for a thousand dollars
This had byn undiscoverd. Pray you goe home; At night ile see you.

_Wife_. You know my obedience And I must practise it.

_Prov_. Make out for the fellow That came with this device. 'Twas queintly carried: The stalke pluckt cleanly out, and in the quill This scroll conveyd. What ere it be the Prince Shall instantly peruse it.

_Enter Orange, Wm., Vandort, Bredero_.

_Or_. How came you by this?

_Prov_. I intercepted it in a dish of Peares Brought by a man of _Barnavelts_, but sent to him From some of better ranck.

_Or_. See what is written here,— 'You have frends left and therefore, Sir, dispaire not.'

_Vand_. 'Tis this that feeds his Insolence, theis are they That, when they should have paid their prairs for him As for a guilty man, adaund his house In the dispight of us and of our Justice.

_Bred_. But such shall find their flattering breath but makes The fire, our Cuntries safetie byds us cherish, To burne with greater heate.

_Vand_. And so consume him.

_Or_. The freedom of our goverment, and our honours, And what we dare doe now lies at the stake. The better part of all the christian world Marks our proceedings, and it wilbe said, Yf having the Conspirators in our powre We sentence none of them, being convincd, too, Of fowre and thirtie Articles and each treason, 'Tis don for feare. Then, to affright the rest, I hold it fitt that _Barnavelt_ one that has Most frends and meanes to hurt, and will fall therefore With greater terror, should receive his Sentence, Then dye as he deserves. For _Modesbargen_ And _Hogerbeets_ we shall find fitt time to Thinck of them hereafter.

_Bred_. Let him be sent for.

_Vand_. In the meane time 'tis fit we should give hearing To the _French_ Embassadors, who, I know, come now To mediat for him.

_Bred_. Wayt upon them in: Their Propositions shalbe answeard freely, And by such men as are their frends, not Servants.
_Enter Boisise, Morier, Wife, Daughter, Attendants_.

_Boi_ [202]. We will plead for him and prevail, we doubt not. Take comfort therefore, Madam, and a while, Since you are not to be admitted here, Leave us to our endeavors.

_Wife_. Heaven direct And prosper theis your charitable traviles.

[_Exeunt Wife & Daughter_.

_Or_. Bring Chaires there for their Lordships.

[_2 Chaires_.

_Vand_.[203] And prepare them A sylent hearing.

_Bois_. My good Lords, We are commaunded by the King our Master (Who ever hath respected your affaires As the tranquility of his owne kingdoms) To let you thus far understand his pleasure: He do's exhort you, as the best foundation Of your estate, with all care to preserve The union of your provinces, and wishes The change that you have made of Maiestrates, The Advocate and Counsellors of State In many of your Townes, breed not dissentions In steed of ceasing them. Touching your Prisoners That stand accused of detestable Crymes, His Counsaile is, if they be culpable, That you use speedy Justice and with rigour.

_Mor_. Ever remembring that the greatest Princes Have sometimes to their glory byn most apt To pardon what was enterprizd against Their Goverments, nay their lives; and that the freest And the best Common-Wealthes, have alwaies usd To spare the blood of their owne Civizens, And that in great offenders--it still being The principall signe of libertie and freedom Not easily, but with mature advice, To touch the lives of Civizens.

_Bois_. And the rather When question is made of such as are Your officers placed in authoritie, Of whom the ancientst Mounsieur _Barnavelt_, So much commended for so many good And notable services don for theis Cuntries, Deserves most serious regard. My Master And other Kings & Princes your allyes, Lyving yet witnesses of his great meritts And with such admiration that they can Be hardly brought to thinck he should conspire Against these States, for which yourselves best know What travayles he hath undergon; and therefore
Once more he do's advice you to use mercy,
Which if you doe, he then shall thinck you merit
The many favours you have tasted from him:
Yf not, he having given you whollsom Counsaile,
Yf you refuce it he must thinck himself
Slighted in his requests; and then, perhaps,
Hereafter you may misse that promptnes in him
Which you have found when your wants most requird it.

_Vand_. May it please your Highnes in the names of all
To make their Lordships answear.

_Or_. Willingly;
For I must still be glad to take occasion
To speak how much your Lordships and myself
Ever stand bound to that most Christian King
Whose favours, with all thancks, we must acknowledge
As with all care preserve. Onely we hope
His Maieſtie will give us leave to say
We greie that he is misinformd of us
And our proceedings, of which we hereafter
Will give him certaine and unanswerable proofes
To iustifie our Actions, which we will
Make knowne to all the world; till when we wish
He will be pleas'd to give way to the States
To finish what they have begun, with Justice
Temperd with mercy; and that your good Lordships
Will give his Grace to understand thus much,
If with the generall voice you doe approve it.

_Bred_. We will confirme it with our generall Seale,
And send our answear to his Propositions
With our respect and duties.

_Mor_. This we shall
Make knowne unto him.

_Or_. Roome there for their Lordships.

_[Ext. Embs_.

_Bred_. What thinck you now, my Lords?

_Vand_. In my opinion
'Tis time he had his Sentence!

_Wm_. Is it drawne?

_Vand_. Yes, here it is. The peoples loves grow daungerous;
In every place the whispers of his rescue;
The lowd and common voice of his deservings
Is floong abroad. Nor doe they handle theis things
By rules of truth and reason, but their owne wills--
Their headstrong hott affections.

_Bred_. Is he sent for?

_Or_. Yes and will presently be here.
_Bred_. Sit downe then, 
And now with speedy Justice let's prepare 
To cutt off this Imposthume.

_Enter Provost & Guard, with Barnavelt_.

_Vand_. 'Tis high time, Sir.

_Prov_. Roome for the Prisoner!

_Vand_. Bring him in; Sit downe, Sir, 
And take your last place with us.

_Bar_. 'Tis your forme 
And I infringe no order.

_Bred_. Mounseiur _Barnavelt_, 
Will ye confes yet freely your bad practises 
And lay those Instruments open to the World, 
Those bloody and bold Instruments you wrought by? 
Mercy may sleepe awhile but never dyes, Sir.

_Bar_. I have spoake all I can, and seald that all 
With all I have to care for now, my Conscience. 
More I beseech your honours--

_Or_. Take your pleasure.

_Vand_. You will give us no more lights: What this world gives you, 
To morrow thus we take away. Receive it.

_Bar_. My Sentence?

_Vand_. Yes; consider for your soule now, 
And so farewell.

_Bar_. I humbly thanck your honours: 
I shall not play my last Act worst.

_Bred_. Heavens mercy 
And a still conscience wayt upon your end, Sir.

_Or_. Now guard him back againe: by the break of day 
You shall have order from us.

_Prov_. Roome for the Prisoner!--

_[Ext. Provost and Guard, with Barnavelt_.

_Or_. The world shall know that what's iust we dare doe.

_Vand_. Nor shall the desperate act of _Leidenberch_ 
Delude what we determind. Let his Coffin 
Be therefore hangd up on the publique Gallowes. 
Th'Executioners like hungry vultures 
Have smelld out their imployment.

_Or_. Let them have it: 
And all that plot against the generall good
Learne from this mans example, great in age,  
Greater in wealth and in authoritie,  
But matchles in his worldly policie,  
That there is one above that do's deride  
The wisest counsailes that are misaplide.

_Exeunt_.

SCAENA 2.

_Enter Harlem, Leyden & Utrecht Executioners_.

_Har_. Now hard and sharpe, for a wager, who shall doe it. Here's a Sword would doe a man's head good to be cut of with it; cures all rhumes, all Catharres, megroomes, verteegoes: presto, be gone!

_Ley_. You must not carry it, _Harlem_: you are a pretty fellow and lop the lyne of life well, but weake to _Baltazar_. Give roome for _Leyden_: heer's an old Cutter, heer's one has polld more pates and neater then a dicker[204], of your Barbers; they nere need washing after. Do's not thy neck itch now to be scratchd a little with this?

_Har_. No, in truth do's it not; but if you'll try first, yf I doe not whip your dodipoll as clenly of and set it on againe as handsomely as it stands now, that you may blow your nose and pledge me too Cans after--

_Ley_. I was afraid  
The rogue had don't indeed.

_Utr_. You two imagine now  
You are excellent workmen and that you can doe wonders,  
And _Utrecht_ but an Asse. Let's feele your Raizors:  
Handsawes, meere handsawes! Do you put your knees to'em too,  
And take mens necks for timber? You cutt a feather?  
Cut butter when your tooles are hot! Looke here, puppies;  
Heer's the sword that cutt of _Pompeis_ head.

_Har_. The head of a Pumppion.[205]

_Utr_. Looke on't but come not neere it: the very wind on't Will borrow a leg or an arme. Heers touch & take, boyes!  
And this shall moaw the head of Mounsieur _Barnavel_.  
Man is but grasse and hay: I have him here  
And here I have him. I would undertake with this Sword  
To cutt the devills head of, hornes and all,  
And give it to a Burger for his breakfast.

_Ley_. We know you have byn the headman of the parish  
A great while, _Utricht_, and ministered much Justice,  
Nickt many a worthie gamester; and that you, _Harlem_,  
Have shortend many a hanging cause, to your Commendation:  
Yet, for all this, who shall trym Monsieur _Barnavel_  
Must run by fortune. You are proper men both;  
But why before me that have studdied the true trick on't  
Theis twenty yeeres, and run through all the theorems?
_Har_. Let's fling for't then.

_Ley_. I am content.

_Utr_. And I.

_Har_. Sit round, then: here are dyce, and ile begin to ye. Have at your head, Sir _John_! dewce ace[206]; a doggs-head[207] The devill turnd this ace up. Farwell, velvet gowne! Thou hast mist the luckiest hand to scratch thy Coxcomb.


_Utr_. Will you take a sleeve for your share, Sir?

_Ley_. 'Tis but a desperat cast, and so hee'l find it, If it fall to me. Cast for your game.

_Utr_. Have at it: Stay, let me swing my Sword thrice round first: now, Now the Graves head ... goose giblitts.-- Two sixes, boyes! I knew I should performe it.

Har. Ye have it: thanck your fortune.

_Utr_. I could not misse it, I never lost so faire a stake yet. How ile doe it And in what posture: first, how ile take my leave of him, With a few teares to draw more money from him; Then fold up his braunchd[209] gowne, his hat, his doblet, And like the devill cry 'mine owne! lye there, boyes!' Then bind his eyes; last stir myself up bravely And, in the midle of a whollsome praire, Whip and-- _hic iacet Barnavelt_.-- Come, let's sing our old Song, And then come view me how I doe my busines. Boy, come, sing you for me.

_[Song. Exeunt_.

SCAENA 3.

_Enter 2 Captaines[210] & their Soldiers, severally_.

1 _Cap_. Here stand we fast.

2 _Cap_. Cock all your Musketts, Soldiers, now, And gentlemen be ready to bend your pikes; The prisoner's comming out.

1 _Cap_. But doe you thinck They meane to take his head of, or to fright him?

2 _Cap_. Heaven keep me from such frights. Why are theis Guards
Commaunded to make good the Execution,
If they intend not death?

1 _Cap_. But dare they doe it?

2 _Cap_. What dare not Justice do that's right and honest?
Is he not proov'd a guilty man? What bugs
Should publck safety be afraid to looke on?
Do you hold the United _States_ so tame to feare him,—
Feeare him a Traitor, too?

1 _Cap_. You know hee's much lov'd,
And every where they stir in his Compassion.

2 _Cap_. They'll stir so long till some of 'em will sinck for't,
Some of the best I feare that glewd his faction;
Their building lyes discoverd and their bases broken.

1 _Cap_. There is much money laid in every place, too,
Hundreds and thousands, that they dare not strike him.

2 _Cap_. Give loosers leave to play the foole; 'tis lost all.
Secure yourself he dyes; nor is it wisdom
To go an ace lesse with him: he is monstrous.
--The people hurry now; stand fast, he is comming.

_Enter Provost, Soldiers & Executioners, with a Coffin & a Gibbett_.

_Pro_. Make roome before! cleere all theis gaping people
And stop their passage.

1 _Cap_. How now? What wonder's this?

_Prov_. Stay! or ile make ye stay: I charge ye stir not.

2 _Cap_. What thinck you now? dare not theis men do Justice?
This is the body of _Leidenberg_, that killd himself
To free his Cause: his shame has found him yet.

_Prov_. Up with him, come: set all your hands & heave him!

_Exec_. A plaguy, heavy Lubber! Sure this fellow
Has a bushell of plot in's belly, he weighes so massy.
Heigh! now againe! he stincks like a hung poll cat.
This rotten treason has a vengeance savour;
This venison wants pepper and salt abominably.

_Prov_. Pyn him aloft, and pin him sure.

_Exec_. I warrant ye;
If ere he run away againe ile swing for him.
This would make a rare signe for a Cookes shop,
The Christmas pie.

[_Exeunt Executioners_.

_Prov_. Come; now about the rest.—Keepe the Court cleere still.

[_Exeunt Provost and Soldiers_.}
2 _Cap_. What thinck you now?

1 _Cap_. Now I am afraid of him.
This prologue should portend a fatall Tragedie:
Theis examples will make 'em shake.

2 _Cap_. 'Tis well they have 'em;
Their stubborneenes and pride requires 'em greater.
The Prince strikes iust ith' nick and strikes home nobely:
This new pretending faction had fird all els;
They had floong a generall ruyn on the Cuntry.

_Enter Boyes & Burgers_.

1 _Boy_. He comes, he comes, he comes! o for a place now!

2 _Boy_. Let's climb the Battlements.

_Cap_. Away with theis rogues.

1 _Burg_. I saw the Guard goe for him: Where shall we be now?

2 _Burg_. He will make a notable Speech, I warrant him.

3 _Burg_. Let's get us neere the Skaffold.

1 _Cap_. Keep of, Turnops:
Ye come upon our Pikes els.

1 _Burg_. Pox o' theis Soldiers?
We cannot see our frends hangd in quiet for 'em.
Come, come, to th' top oth' hall.

[_Exeunt Boys & Burgers_.]

2 _Cap_. Away, good pilchers![211]
Now blow your matches and stand fast: he comes here.

1 _Cap_. And now bend all your pikes.

_Enter Provost, Barnavelt, Lords, Guard._
(A Scaffold put out) _Executioner_.

_Prov_. Cleere all the Skaffold;
Let no more into th'Court; we are choakd with people.

_Bar_. You are curteous in your preparations, gentlemen,

1 _Lord_. You must ascend, Sir.

_Bar_. Feareles I will, my lords,
And, what you can inflict, as feareles suffer.
Thus high you raise me, a most glorious kindnes
For all my Cares! For my most faithfull service
For you and for the State thus ye promote me!
I thanck ye, Cuntrymen, most nobely thanck ye.
--Pull of my Gowne. Of what place are ye, frend?

_Exec_. Of _Utrich_, Sir.
_Bar_. Of _Utrich_! Wherefore, prethee, 
Art thou appointed here?

_Exec_. To tell you true, Sir, 
I won this place at dyce: we were three appointed.

_Bar_. Am I becom a generall game? a Rest[212] 
For every Slave to pull at? Thanck ye still: 
You are growne the noblest in your favours, gentlemen. 
--What's that hangs there? what Coffin?

_Lord_. How it stirrs him.

2 _Lord_. The body, Sir, of _Leidenberch_[213] the Traitor.

_Bar_. The traitour?

2 _Lord_. I, the Traitor, the fowle Traitor, 
Who, though he killd himself to cleere his cause, 
Justice has found him out and so proclaimed him.

_Bar_. Have mercy on his soule! I dare behold him.

1 _Lord_. Beleeve me, he's much moved.

2 _Lord_. He has much reason.

_Bar_. Are theis the holly praeres ye prepare for me--
The comforts to a parting soule? Still I thanck ye, 
Most hartely and lovingly I thanck ye. 
Will not a single death give satisfaction, 
O you most greedy men and most ungratefull,--
The quiet sleep of him you gape to swallow, 
But you must trym up death in all his terrors 
And add to soules departing frights and feavors? 
Hang up a hundred Coffins; I dare view 'em, 
And on their heads subscribe a hundred treasons 
It shakes not me, thus dare I smile upon 'em 
And strongly thus outlooke your fellest Justice.

2 _Lord_. Will ye bethinck ye, Sir, of what ye come for.

_Bar_. I come to dye: bethinck you of your Justice 
And with what Sword ye strike, the edge of mallice. 
Bethinck ye of the travells I had for ye, 
The throaes and grones to bring faire peace amongst ye; 
Bethinck ye of the dangers I have plundgd through 
And almost gripes of death, to make you glorious. 
Thinck when the Cuntry, like a Wildernes, 
Brought nothing forth but desolation, 
Fire, Sword and Famine; when the earth sweatt under ye 
Cold dewes of blood, and _Spanish_ flames hoong ore ye, 
And every man stood markt the child of murder 
And women wanted wombes to feed theis cruelties;-- 
Thinck then who stept in to you, gently tooke ye 
And bound your bleeding wounds up; from your faces 
Wipd of the sweatts of sorrow, fed and nurssd ye; 
Who brought the plowgh againe to crowne your plenty;
Your goodly meadowes who protected (Countrymen)
From the armd Soldiers furious marches; who
Unbard the Havens that the floating Merchant
Might clap his lynnen wings up to the windes
And back the raging waves to bring you profit.
Thinck through whose care you are a Nation
And have a name yet left,—a fruitfull Nation
(Would I could say as thankfull)—bethink ye of theis things
And then turne back and blush, blush [for] my ruyne.

1 _Lord_. 'Tis strange how this [man b]rags; 'tis a strange impudence
Not to be pittied in his [case], not sufferd.
You breed the peace, you bring the plowgh againe?
You wipe the fire and blood of from this Cuntry,
And you restore hir to hir former Beuty?
Blush in thine age, bad man; thy grave blush for thee
And scorn to hide that man that holds no Creadit.
Beare witnes all the world that knowes our Trobles
Or ever greiv'd our plagues, what we have sufferd
And, under Heaven, by what armes we have cur'd theis,—
Councells and frends; in which I tell thee (_Barnavelt_),
And through thy Impudence I here proclaime it,
Thou hadst the least and last share. 'Tis not your face, Sir,
The greatnes of your friends, corruptly purchast,
The Crying up of your manie Services,
Which lookd into wither away like Mushrumps,
Shall scandal us.

2 _Lord_. Your _Romaine_ end, to make men
Imagine your strong conscience fortifide,
No, nor your ground Religion. Examine all men
Branded with such fowle syns as you now dye for,
And you shall find their first stepp still Religion.
_Gowrie_ in _Scotland_, 'twas his maine pretention:
Was not he honest, too? his Cuntries father?
Those fyery Speritts next that hatchd in _England_
That bloody Powder-Plot, and thought like meteors
To have flashd their Cuntryes peace out in a Moment:
Were not their Barrells loden with Religion?
Were not they pious, iust and zealous Subiects?
Humble your soule for shame, and seeke not now, Sir,
To tumble from that happines even Angells
Were throwne from for their pride. Confes, and dye well.

1 _Lord_. Will ye confes your faultes?

_Bar_. I come not heather
To make myself guilty; yet one fault I must utter,
And 'tis a great one.

2 _Lord_. The greater mercy.

_Bar_. I dye for saving this unthankfull Cuntry.

1 _Lord_. Play not with heaven.

_Bar_. My Game's as sure as yours is,
And with more care and innocence I play it.
Take of my doblet; and I prethee, fellow,
Strike without feare.

_Exec_. I warrant ile fitt ye. 
I pray forgive me, Sir.

_Bar_. Most hartely, 
And heer's my hand. I love thee, too: thy physick 
Will quickly purge me from the worldes abuses. 
When I speak lowdest, strike.

_Exec_. I shall observe ye.

_Bar_. Farwell, my lords: to all your Counsailes fortune, 
Happie succes and proffit; peace to this Cuntry; 
And to you all, that I have bredd like children, 
Not a more faithfull father but more fortunate. 
Doe not I stay too long?

2 _Lord_. Take your owne time, Sir.

_Bar_. I have a wiffe, my lords, and wretched children, 
Unles it please his Grace to looke upon 'em 
And your good honours with your eies of favour. 
'Twill be a little happines in my death 
That they partake not with their fathers ruyns.

1 _Lord_. Let not that troble ye: they shall not find it.

_Bar_. Commend my last breath to his Excellence; 
Tell him the Sun he shot at is now setting, 
Setting this night, that he may rise to morrow, 
For ever setting. Now let him raigne alone 
And with his rayes give life and light to all men. 
May he protect with honour, fight with fortune, 
And dye with generall love, an old and good Prince. 
My last petition, good Cuntrymen, forget me: 
Your memories wound deeper then your mallice, 
And I forgive ye all.--A little stay me.-- 
Honour and world I fling ye thus behind me, 
And thus a naked poore man kneele to heaven: 
Be gracious to me, heare me, strengthen me. 
I come, I come, o gracious heaven! now, now, 
Now, I present--

_Exec_. Is it well don mine Heeres?

1 _Lord_. Somewhat too much; you have strooke his fingers, too, 
But we forgive your haste. Draw in the body; 
And Captaines, we discharge your Companies.

_Vand_. Make cleere the Court.--Vaine glory, thou art gon! 
And thus must all build on Ambition.

2 _Lord_. Farwell, great hart; full low thy strength now lyes: 
He that would purge ambition this way dies.

_Exeunt_.

INTRODUCTION TO _CAPTAIN UNDERWIT_.

This anonymous Comedy is printed, for the first time, from Harl. MS. 7,650,—a small quarto of eighty-nine leaves. I have followed Halliwell (Dictionary of Old Plays) in adopting the title, Captain _Underwit_. There is no title-page to the MS.

An editor with plenty of leisure on his hands would find ample opportunities in Captain _Underwit_ for discursive comment. Sometimes I have been obliged to pass over odd phrases and out-of-the-way allusions without a line of explanation; but in the index at the end of the fourth volume I hope to settle some difficulties that at present are left standing.

The date of the play I take to be circ. 1640 or 1642. In I. 1 there is a mention of the "league at _Barwick_ and the late expeditions," where the reference can only be to Charles I.'s march into Scotland in the spring of 1639, and to the so-called Pacification of _Berwick_. Again, in III. 3, there is an allusion to the Newmarket Cup. Historians of the Turf say that Newmarket races date from 1640; but this statement is incorrect, for in Shirley's _Hyde Park_ (V. 1),--a play licensed in 1632 and printed in 1637,--mention is made of a certain "Bay _Tarrall_ that won the Cup at Newmarket." We find also an allusion to the "great ship" (III. 3), which was built in 1637. Of Mr. Adson's "new ayres" (IV. 1) I know very little. He brought out in 1621 a volume of "Courtly Masquing Ayres," but published nothing later.--although, of course, he may have continued writing long afterwards. Hawkins and Mr. Chappell are altogether silent about Adson's achievements.

Gerard Langbaine tells us that Shirley left at his death some plays in manuscript: I have little doubt, or rather no doubt at all, that Captain _Underwit_ is one of them. In the notes I have pointed out several parallelisms to passages in Shirley's plays; and occasionally we find actual repetitions, word for word. But apart from these strong proofs, it would be plain from internal evidence that the present piece is a domestic comedy of Shirley's, written in close imitation of Ben Jonson. All the characters are old acquaintances. Sir Richard Huntlove, who longs to be among his own tenants and eat his own beef in the country; his lady, who loves the pleasures of the town, balls in the Strand, and masques; Device, the fantastic gallant,—these are well-known figures in Shirley's plays. No other playwright of that day could have given us such exquisite poetry as we find in Captain _Underwit_. The briskness, too, and cleverness of the dialogue closely recall Shirley; but it must be owned that there are few plays of Shirley's written with such freedom, not to say grossness.

[CAPTAIN UNDERWIT, A COMEDY.]

_Act the First_.
Enter Captaine Underwit and his man Thomas.

Un. Come, my man _Thomas_, and my fathers old man _Thomas_; rejoyce, I say, and triumph: thy Master is honourable.

Tho. Then wee are all made.

Un. No, tis only I am made.

Tho. What, and please your worship?

Un. I am made a Captaine of the traind band,[214] _Thomas_, and this is my Commission, this very paper hath made me a Captaine.

Tho. Are you a paper Captaine, Sir? I thought more had gone to the makeing up of a Captaine.

Un. They are fools that thinke so, provided he have the favour of the Livetenant of the County.

Tho. Which it seemes you have.

Un. The honour of it is more then the thing, _Thomas_, since I did not bribe the Secretaries steward or what servant else so ever hath the government of his Lordship therein.

Tho. This is very strange.

Un. Not so much as transitorie wicker bottles to his Deputy Livetenant, no fewell for his winter, no carriages for his summer, no steple sugarloaves to sweeten his neighbours at Christmas, no robbing my brave tennants of their fatt Capons or Chickens to present his worship withall, _Thomas_.

Tho. I cry your worship mercy, you sold him land the last terme; I had forgot that.

Un. I, that lay convenient for him. I us'd him like a gentleman and tooke little or nothing; 'twere pitty two or three hundred acres of dirt should make friends fall out: we should have gone to fenceing schools.

Tho. How, sir?

Un. I meane to _Westminster_ hall, and let one another blood in Lawe.

Tho. And so the Land has parted you?

Un. Thou saist right, _Thomas_, it lies betweene both our houses indeed. But now I am thus dignified (I thinke that's a good word) or intituled is better, but tis all one; since I am made a Captaine--

Tho. By your owne desert and vertue.

Un. Thou art deceavd; it is by vertue of the Commission,--the Commission is enough to make any man an officer without desert; _Thomas_, I must thinke how to provide mee of wartlike accoutrements to accomodate, which comes of Accomodo[215]: _Shakespeare_. The first, and
First--

_Tho_. No, Sir, it comes of so much money disburs'd.

_Un_. In troth, and it does, _Thomas_; but take out your table booke and remember to bring after me into the Country, for I will goe downe with my father in law Sir _Richard_ this morning in the Coach,--let me see--first and formost: a Buff Coate and a pair of breeches.

_Tho_. First and formost: Item, a Buff Coate fox and a pair of breeches of the same Cloth.

_Un_. A pair of bootes and spurres, and a pair of shooes without spurres.

_Tho_. Spurres.

_Un_. A pair of gray stockins, thick dapple gray stockins, with a belt, to be wore either about my shoulder or about my wast.

_Tho_. Wast.

_Un_. A _London Dutch_ felt without a band, with a feather in't.

_Tho_. Without a feather in't.

_Un_. An old fox[216] blade made at _Hounsloe_ heath, and then all the Bookes to be bought of warlike discipline, which the learned call Tacticks.

_Tho_. Ticktacks.[217]--If your worship would take my Counsell, considering the league at _Barwick_[218] and the late expeditions, wee may find some of these things in the North or else speake with some reform'd Captaine, though he bee a Catholike; and it may bee wee may have them at cheaper rates.

_Un_. 'Tis true, Thomas: but I must change the lynings of the breeches, for I love to bee cleanly.

_Tho_. So you may, Sir; and have the fowling of them yourselfe.

_Un_. Let me see: A leading staff--

_Tho_. A leaden staffe--

_Un_. A lead'ing staffe.

_Tho_.--ding staffe. Why, a Cane is a leading staffe in a Captaine's hand.

_Un_. But I must have tassells, _Thomas_, and such things.

_Tho_. At the harnesse of the Carthorses there are tassells and Bells, too, if you will.

_Un_. Bells? What should I doe with em?

_Tho_. Ring all your companie in.
_Un_. Thou would'st make me a Captaine of a Morris dance. What serve the phifes and Drumms for, prethee?

_Tho_. But does your worship thinke you shall endure the bouncing of the Gunns? I observed you ever kept a way of at the Musters.

_Un_. Thou shalt therefore every morne goe a birding about the house to inure me to the report. By that tyme thou hast kild all my pigeons I shall endure the noise well enough.

_Tho_. But, Sir, you must have a dry Nurse, as many Captaines have. Let me see: I can hire you an old limping decayed Sergeant at _Brainford_ that taught the boyes,--he that had his beard sing'd of at the last Muster: hee'le doe it bravely.

_Un_. What must he have?

_Tho_. Alas, twenty pipes[219] of _Barmudas_ a day, six flagons of March[220] beere, a quart of Sack in a weeke, for he scornes meate; and the kitching wench to bring the shirt to him and the only band, for Cuffs he gets none but such as his drunkennes procures him with quarrelling.

_Un_. No, I shall be bashfull to learne of a stranger, thou sha't goe seeke out Captaine _Sackburye_.

_Tho_. He that weares no money in his scarlett hose, and when he is drunke is infected with Counsell?

_Un_. The very same; you shall find him at his Lodging in _Fleetstreet_ or in the next taverne. Give him this Letter; tell him I desire his Companie this summer in the Country. He shall have a horse of mine, say:--here, give him this gold, too.

_Tho_. I hope it is gameing gold.

_Un_. He shall read warres to me and fortification.

_Tho_. I can teach you to build a sconce[221], sir.

_Un_. Beside, he is very valiant; he beate me twice when he was drunk, but, poore fellow, I ask'd him forgivenes the next day. Make hast, good _Thomas_, and remember all the Tacticks.

_Tho_. I warrant you, Sir: I know 'em well enough. [_Exit_.

_Un_. So, so; here's Sir _Richard_.

_Enter Sir Richrd Huntlove, his Ladie and Mistresse Dorothy_.

_Sir Rich_. Me thinkes you looke more sprightly since you were made a Captaine.

_Un_. Oh, good Sir _Richard_, indeed my face is the worst part about mee; and yet it will serve at the Muster.

_Do_. Serve! With reverence to the title, I have seene a Generall with a worse Countenance. It is a good leading face, and though you have no cut ore the nose or other visible scarre, which I doubt not but you may
receave all in good tyme, it is a quarrelling face and fitt for a man of
warre.

_Un_. I thanke you, sweet mistress _Dorothy_: I will commend you as much
when you are in the Countrey.--But doe you resolve to goe downe this
morning, Sir?

_Sir Rich_. By all meanes: is your sister readie? bid the Coachman make
hast, and have a care you leave none of your trinketts behind: after a
little dialogue with my scrivenour Ile returne, and then to Coach.

_Lady_. But why this expedition, this posting out of towne as the Aire
were infected?

_Sir Rich_. The[222] truth is, my sweet Ladie, we have no Exchange in
the Country, no playes, no Masques, no Lord Maiors day, no gulls nor
gallifoists[223]. Not so many Ladies to visit and weare out my Coach
weelers, no dainty Madams in Childbedd to set you a longing when you
come home to lie in with the same fashion'd Curtaines and hangings, such
curious silver Andirons, Cupbord of plate and pictures. You may goe to
Church in the Countrey without a new Satten gowne, and play at penny
gleeke[224] with a Justice of peaces wife and the parsons; show your
white hand with but one Diamond when you carve and not be ashaw'd to
weare your owne wedding ring with the old poesie. There are no Doctors
to make you sick wife; no legends of lies brought home by yong gallants
that fill my Dyning roome with fleas and new fashions, that will write
verses upon the handle of your fanne and comend the education of your
Monkey, which is so like their worshipes as they were all of one familie.
I have no humour to provokeing meates; I will downe and enter into a
Christian diett, Madam. There is sport in killing my owne partridge and
pheasant; my Trowtes will cost me less than your Lobsters and crayfish
drest with amber greece[225], and I may renew my acquaintance with
mutton and bold chines of beefe; entertaine my tenants, that would pay
for my housekeeping all the yeere and thanke my worship at Christmas,
over and above their rents, with Turkies and Beeves of supererogation.
You may guess I have some reason to change the aire, wife, and so I
leave you to prepare your selfe: You have my purpose and may expect mee.

[_Exit_.

_Lady_. However he may pretend, and point at charge
Which makes his stay unpleasant, 'tis his Jelousie
That strikes him into wildnes and dislike
Of all things here: he does not use mee well.
--Where is my sister?

_Do_. In the Closet, Madam.
--I must waite upon my Ladie, sweete Captaine.

[_Exeunt Lady & Dorothy_.

_Un_. This Wench has a notable witt, if I have any Judgment: I doe not
thinke but shee's in love with me. If I thought shee were not given to
be with child I would examine her abilities; but these waiting women are
so fruitfull, when they have a good turne from a gentleman they have not
the vertue of concealment: touch a Chambermaide and take a Child,
--everything workes with their soluble bodies.

_Enter Monsir Device_.
_De_. Noble Mr. _Underwitt_!

_Un_. I know not whome you meane, sir: he that comands the family in chiefe, hath been honor'd with a sword and "rise Sir _Richard_" (who is but my father in lawe[226] to a[nd?] by a former wife): for Mr. _Underwitt_, whome to salute you humbled your Cloth a gold Dublet, I ken not the wight.

_De_. Doe not you know mee, noble Sir?

_Un_. Upon even tearmes I may call your name to memorie, but if you understand not my addition[227] it is honourable to forgett the best friend I have.

_De_. What's the mistry of this? Your addition? pray honour me to know it.

_Un_. He that was Mr. _Underwit_ is made a Captaine; you may, if you please, take notice of his title.

_De_. I beg your mercy, noble Captaine, and congratulate your addition of honour. It was Ignorance which, I professe, made me salute you with a wrong preface. Now, Capt., I shall bee proud to march under the ensigne of your favour.

_Un_. Friend _Device_, how does thy body? I am thy vassall; servant is for porters, watermen & lacquies, & is no witt neither. You preserve your tropes and your elegancies? What fancies doe adorne to-day? If I were a Constable I might apprehend you for suspition you had robd a pedlar. Does this thatchd cottage head hold still in fashion? What paid you for this dead mans hair? Where's your night rail[228]? The last time I saw you was in _Fleetstreet_, when at Complement and bare to an other gentleman. I tooke him for a Barber and I thought you by the wide lynnens about your neck [to] have been under correction in the suds[229], sir.

_De_. Wee are govern'd by the Mode, as waters by the Moone; but there are more changes in th'one than t'other. But does your Comand extend to the Sea or the land service?

_Un_. I never see the Sea in my life, sir, nor intend it.

_De_. You are not the first Captaine that has seene no service: 'tis time lost to travell for't when a man may bee a Comander at home. I never traveld myselfe.

_Un_. No, Sir?

_De_. And yet I understand garbes, from the elevation of your pole to the most humble galosh.

_Un_. Can your hanches play well in these close cut breeches? they want but a pummell to distinguish 'em from Trouses[230].

_De_. O sir, there is a perfect geometry in these breeches; you doe not observe the morality of your fancie, nor the gentile play and poize of your Lemon, Orange or Melon: this is gentry. Why, I understand all the curiosities of the Mode to a Mathematicall point, and yet I never travaild in all my life for't.
These are extraordinary parts. Alas, a Captaine has but fifty or a hundred at most to looke after, and all they have not so much witt as your French Lacquey. And what need any travaile to instruct them? I can teach them their motions by word of mouth: when they come to fight, my Countrymen will retreate naturally.

Enter Ladie and her Sister.

Lady. Now in revenge could I bee rich, but that I would not be a prisoner to my Chamber. These superstitions will make women doe Strange things sometymes.

Sis. Of whome doe you thinke he should be jealous, sister?


Sis. I hope he has no suspition of my servants, That, under the pretence of formall Courtship To mee, should ayme at his dishonour: there's One that would weare my livery.

Lady. Device?

Hang him, outside! no, my husband loves His folly and would have him the state foole, His garbes are so ridiculous.

Sis. What opinion (Still with a confidence of your cleere thoughts) Holdes he of the Knight Sir Francis Courtwell, That often visits us?

Lady. Sure a Noble one, If I may aske my Innocence; yet I find Him very amorous. O my husband loves him; He is a powerfull man at Court, whose friendship Is worth preserving. Sister, I confesse His nobleness and person hath prevaild With mee to give him still the freest welcome My modestie and honor would permitt; But if I thought my husband had a scruple His visits were not honourable, I Should soone declare how much I wish his absence.

Un. Your Mistresse and my Lady; I have some Affaires require despatch, ile leave you to 'em. Exit.

Sis. My witty servant!

Lady. Most pretious Alamode, Monsir Device!

De. I blesse my lipps with your white handes.

Lady. You come to take your leave as knowing by instinct wee have but halfe an hour to stay.

Sis. Wee are for the Countrey as fast as your Flanders mares will trott, sir.
_De_. That's a Solecisme till the Court remove;--are you afraid of the small pox?

_Sis_. The less the better for a gentlewoman.

_De_. And the greater more genty for a Cavallier. By this glove (a pretty embroidery is't not?) you must not deprive us so soone of your sweet presence. Why, there's a Ball to night in the _Strand_ and tomorrow I had a purpose to waite upon you to the pictures; I ha' bespoke regalias[231] there, too. There will be a new play shortly, a pretty Comedy written by a profest Scholler: he scornes to take money[232] for his witt, as the Poetts doe.

_Lady_. He is Charitable to the Actors.

_Sis_. It may be their repentance enough to play it.

_De_. You must needs stay and give your opinion. What will become of me when you are gon, Ladie?

_Lady_. If your devotion catch not cold you may breath your _Barbary_ and visit us, where you may be confident of your welcome.

_De_. I dare as soone doubt I was Christned. But pray let us visit the Exchange and take a trifle to weare for my sake before you goe. What say, Madam? my owne Coach is at dore, the lynyng is very rich and the horses are very well matcht.

_Lady_. Alas, wee expect upon my husbands returne to take Coach imediattie.

_Sis_. But if wee see you in the Countrey you will doe us an honour?

_De_. You invite me to my happines. I can play well o' the kittar; I thinke your musique is but course there; wee'le have a Countrey dance after supper and a song. I can talke loud to a Theorbo[233], too, and thats cald singing. Now, yee shall heare my Ballet.

_Sis_. Did you make a Ballet?

_De_. Oh I, the greatest wit lies that way now; a pittifull Complaint of the Ladies when they were banish'd the Towne[234] with their husbands to their Countrie houses, compeld to change the deere delight of Maske and Revells here for Wassail and windie bagpipes; instead of Silken Fairies tripping in the Banquetting Roome, to see the Clownes sell fish in the hall and ride the wild mare, and such Olimpicks, till the ploughman breake his Crupper, at which the Villagers and plumporidge men boile over while the Dairy maid laments the defect of his Chine and he, poore man, disabled for the trick, endeavours to stifle the noise and company with perfume of sweat instead of Rose water.

_Lady_. This must be our Countrey recreation, too!

_Enter Sir Francis Courtwell_.

_De_. Who is this?

_Lady_. 'Tis Sir _Francis Courtwell_. You cannot choose but know him.--This must bee
A favour, Sir, to visit us at parting.

_Sir Fr._ I came with other expectation, Madam,
Then to heare this: I could receave no newes
So unwelcome. What misfortune doth conclude
The Towne so unhappie?

_Lady_. 'Tis my husbands pleasure,
Affrighted with some Dreame he had last night;
For I can guess no other cause.

_Sir Fr._ Could hee
Bee capable of fright and you so neere him?

_De_. He cannot choose but know me then.--Sir, I kisse your noble hand
and shall be stellified in your knowledge.

_Sir Fr._ What thing's this that looks so like a race Nagg trick'd with
ribbands?

_Sis_. He is one of my inamoratos, Sir;
They call him Mounsir _Device_.

_Sir Fr._ Lady, your faire excuse.--He has, it seemes,
Some confidence to prevail upon your liking
That he hath bought so many Bride laces.

_Sis_. You may interpret him a walking mirth.

_Sir Fr._ He moves upon some skrues and may be kinsman
To the engine that is drawne about with Cakebread,
But that his outside's brighter.

_De_. Sir _Francis Courtwell_.

_Sir Fr._ That's my name, Sir.

_De_. And myne Mounsieur _Device_.

_Sir Fr._ A _Frenchman_ Sir?

_De_. No, sir; an _English_ Monsier made up by a _Scotch_ taylor that
was prentice in _France_. I shall write my greatest ambition satisfied
if you please to lay your Comands upon mee.

_Sir Fr._ Sweet lady, I beseech you mussell your beagle; I dare not
trust my selfe with his folly, and he may deserve more beating then I am
willing to bestow at this tyme.

_Sis_. Take truce a little, servant.

_Sir Fr._ Will you consider, Madam, yet how much
A wounded hart may suffer?

_Lady_. Still the old businesse;
Indeede you make me blush, but I forgive you
If you will promise to sollicite this
Unwelcome cause no more.
_Sir Fr._ 'Tis my desire; I take no pleasure in a pilgrimage. If you instruct a nearer way, 'tis in Your will to save your eare the trouble of My pleading, Madam, if with one soft breath You say I'me entertain'd; but for one smile That speaks consent you'le make my life your servant.

_Lady_. My husband, Sir--

_Sir Fr._ Deserves not such a treasure to himselfe And starve a noble servant.

_Lady_. You but pleade For vanitie: desist, for if I could (Forgetting honour and my modestie) Allow your wild desires, it were impossible That wee should meete more then in thought and shadowes.

_Sir Fr._ If these shadowes, Madam, be but darke enough, I shall account it happines to meet you. But referr that to opportunitie, Which our kind starrs in pitty will sooner offer To both our ioyes.

_Lady_. But he is very Jealous.

_Sir Fr._ That word assures my victorie; I never Heard any wife accuse her husband of Or cold neglect or Jealousie, but she had A confirm'd thought within to trick his forehead-- It is but Justice, Madam, to reward him For his suspitious thoughts.

_Lady_. D'ee thinke it fitt To punish his suspition yet perswade To act the sinne he feares?

_Sir Fr._ Custome and nature make it less offence In women to comitt the deed of pleasure Then men to doubt their chastity; this flowing From poison'd natures, that excus'd by fraielty. Yet I have heard the way to cure the scare Has bin the deed; at truth the scruples vanish. I speake not, Madam, with a thought to suffer A foule breath whisper your white name; for he That dares traduce it must beleive me dead, Or my fame twisted with your honour must not Have pitty on the Accusers blood.

_Device_. I will attend you in the Countrey; I take my leave and kiss your ivory hand; Madam, and yours. Sir _Francis_, your obliged. 

_Sir Fr._ You bless me with this promise. --How can you, lady, suffer this impertinent Afflict you thus?
Sis. Alas, my parrot's dead and he supplies the prattle: 'th' spring and fall he will save me charge of physic in purging Melancholy.

Sir Fr. If you dare
Accept a servant, Ladie, upon my Comends, I should present a kinsman t'ee Who sha'not want a fortune nor, I hope, A merit to possess your faire opinion.

Sis. You doe not say he is hansome all this while, and that's a maine consideration. I wod not have a man so tall as a Mast, that I must clyme the shroudes to kisse him, nor so much a dwarfe that I must use a multiplying glass to know the proportion of his limbes. A great man is a great house with too much garret and his head full of nothing but lumber: if he be too round agen hees only fitt to be hung upp in a Christall glasse. The truth is the man I love must please me at first sight; if he take my eye I may take more tyme to examine his talent.

Sir Fr. Do you but grace him with acessse and aske your owne fancie, Ladie, how you can affect him. Ile not despaire if he were cur'd of modesty, which is the whole fault in his behaviour; but he may passe without contempt.

Do. That modestie is a foule fault.

Enter Captaine Underwitt.

Un. Come away, Cosen; Sir Richard's come and calls for you; the Coachman is ready to mount. Noble Sir Richard, because you may not loose breath, you may call me a Captaine, please you, a Captaine o' the train'd band.

Sis. 'Tis very certaine.

Sir Fr. I congratulate your title, Sir.

Un. If you come into the Countrey you shall see me doe as much with my leading staff as another.

Sir Fr. You wonot thrash your men?

Un. If I did 'tis not the first time I ha thrash'd. If I find my Souldiers tractable they shall find me but a reasonable Captaine.

Enter Sir Richard [and] Lady.

Sir Rich. Sir Francis, I am sorrie the violence of my affaires wonot let me entertaine you to my wishes. Pray honour us with your presence in the Countrey, if you can dispence with your employments, when I shall satsisfe for this haste of my departure.

Sir Fr. I shall attend you, Sir, and present a kinsman of mine to this virgin Ladie: he is like to be Master of no narrow fortune. It was my busines at this tyme only to prepare his accessse.

Sir Rich. He shall have my vote for your sake, Sir Francis. Come, Madam.
_Sir Fr_. I le waite upon you to the Coach and take my leave.

_Un_. Sweet Mistresse _Doritye_.

[Exeunt_.

_Act the Second_.

_Enter Captaine Sackburie, reading a Letter, and Thomas_.

_Capt_. Hum--hum--Where's the gold?

_Tho_. Here, Sir; one, two, three, fowre, and five.

_Cap_. Thou hast learnd the Cinque pace[235], _Tho_: is the gold weight?

_Tho_. I hope so, Sir.

_Cap_. Hum--into the Country;--thou hast a horse, too?

_Tho_. Not about me, Sir, but he is ready, all but brideling and sadling, at our Inne, Captaine. My master sayes you shalbe troubled with no horse but his.

_Cap_. Why, is he lame?

_Tho_. What? _Truehunt_, the black nag with three white feete? he lame? You meane that I ride upon my selfe.

_Cap_. Hum,--'make hast as you will preserve the reputation of your true friend and servant:'--so, so--Comend me to him, _Thomas_; I wonot faile to visit him.

_Tho_. You may demand the Nag, if you ask for _Humfrey_ the Ostler, by the same token he has bin there this foure dayes and had but one peck of provender.

_Cap_. Enough I wonot faile, I say. Farewell, honest _Tom a Lincolne_, farewell: comend me to the traind band.

_Tho_. Pray doe not fall a drinking and forgett it: bu'oy[236], noble Captaine.

[Exit_.

_Enter Mr. Courtwell_.

_Cou_. My expectation of the Lawz well mett!

_Cou_. I am glad to see you, Captaine.

_Cap_. Is thy sight perfect? Thy poring upon statutes and booke cases Makes me suspecte. But dost thou thinke to bee A Dominus factotum on the Bench, And be a Civill Lawyer?
_Cou_. You are merry.

_Cap_. Tis more then thou hast been this twelvemonth: th'ast Lost thy Complexion with too much study.
Why, thou shalt be an heire and rule the rost
Of halfe a shire, and thy father would but Dye once;
Come to the Sizes with a band of Janisaries
To equall the Grand Signor, all thy tenants,
That shall at their owne charge make themselves fine
And march like Cavaliers with tilting feathers,
Gaudy as _Agamemnons_ [237] in the play:
After whome thou, like _St. George_ a horseback
Or the high Sheriff, shall make the Cuntrey people
Fall downe in adoration of thy Crooper
And silver stirrup, my right worshipfull,
A pox a buckram and the baggage in't!
Papers defil'd with Court hand and long dashes,
Or Secretarie lines that stradle more
Then _Frenchmen_ and lesse wholsome to the Client.
Is thy head to be fild with Proclamations,
Rejoynders and hard words beyond the _Alchemist_ [238]?
Be ruld, and live like a fine gentleman
That may have haukes and hounds and whores and horses,
And then thou art fitt Companie.

_Cou_. You talke wildlie;
I wou'd you saw your Errour that place all
Your happinesse upon such course delights.
I should degenerate too much and forfet
My education.

_Cap_. Education! he has gott a tune:
I doe not thinke but thou wilt leave thy law
And exercise thy talent in composeing
Some treatises against long haire and drinking
That most unchristian weed yclipt tobacco;
Preach to the puisnes[239] of the Inne sobrietie,
And abstinence from shaveing of lewd Baylies
That will come shortlie to your Chamber doores
And there with reverence entreat your worshipes
Come forth and be arrested,--precious tappoles!
I wo'd not willingly despaire of thee,
For thy Lands sake and cause I am thy Countreyman.
One generous Vagarie, and thou wer't wise,
Would breake somebodies hart within a sennight,
And then th'art Lord of all. Have but the grace
To dine wo' mee at taverne and ile tell
Thy friends there is some hope.

_Cou_. My friends?

_Cap_. Thy father's
In _Essex_: if he live heele purchase _Romford_;
If he die sooner then the towne's our owne;
Spend but an acre a day and thou maist live
Till all the world be wearie of thee. Betweene
Us two, what thincke you of a wench?
_Cou_. Nothing.

_Cap_. You meane one wench betwene us two is nothing. I know a hundred Leverets[240], things that will Bound like a dancer on the rope and kiss thee Into thy naturall complexion: A sinner that shall clime thee like a squirrell.

_Cou_. And crack me like a Nutt. I ha no kernell To spare for her sweet tooth.

_Cap_. That was a metaphor: hee's not desperate!

_Cou_. Buoy, my deere Captaine.

_Cap_. Wy, farewell, Countreyman: I may live yet to witnes thy conversion. [_Exit_.

_Enter a Footeman_.

_Cou_. How does my uncle?

_Fo_. He desires presentlie To speake with you at his lodging.

_Cou_. Ile attend him.

[_Exit_.

[SCENE 2.]

_Enter Captaine Underwit and Thomas_.

_Un_. And hast thou been carefull of all those things I gave charge to be provided?

_Tho_. There is a note of the particulars.

_Un_. Tis very well done, _Thomas_.--Let me see: Imprimis--

_Tho_. The Captaine wonot faile to be w'ee, sir. He was not at his lodging; and inquiring at the _Horne_ tavern, I heard he had been there with two or three Citizens that ow'd him mony.

_Un_. That he owde mony to.

_Tho_. Tis all one, I thinke, Sir; for when Captaines have not pay, the creditors may pay themselves. Here they said he did mollifie the hart of the haberdashers and dranke himselfe a little mellowe ere they parted, which gave me some hope I might find him ere night at the _Divell_, where indeed I fetcht him out of the fire and gave him your Letter.

_Un_. And the gold too?

_Tho_. That was the first word he read; if you did not write it in text he could not have found it out so soone. His eye was no sooner in the
inside but his arme flew out with an open mouth and his very fingers
cryed "give me the gold!" which presumeing to be weight he put in his
hocos pocas, a little dormer under his right skirt; and so takeing his
word to come downe and turning over your horse to him, with caution not
to be drunk and forgett your worship, I tooke my leave and went about
my Inventorie.

_Thom_. Theis things are very right, _Thomas_. Let me see now the bookes
of Martiall discipline.

_Tho_. I bought up all that I found have relation to warr and fighting.

_Tho_. This I conceiv'd to have the vertue of _Achilles_ speare: if you
bee hurt you need goe no further then the blade for a Surgeon.

_Thom_. _Buckler of Faith_.

_Tho_. You had the sword before, Sir.

_Thom_. _Booke of Mortification_.

_Tho_. I, Sir, that is a kind of killing which I thought very necessary
for a Captaine.

_Thom_. Item: the _Gunpowder Treason_ and the _Booke of Cannons_.

_Tho_. I wod not lett any shott scape mee.

_Thom_. _Shakespeares_ Workes.--Why _Shakespeares_ Workes?

_Tho_. I had nothing for the pikemen before.

_Thom_. They are plays.

_Tho_. Are not all your musterings in the Countrey so, Sir? Pray,
read on.

_Thom_. _Bellarmines Controversie_ in six tomes.

_Tho_. That I took upon the Stationers word, who had been a pretty
Schollar at Paules; for the word _Bellarmine_, he said, did comprehend
warr, weapons and words of defiance. Ill words provoke men to draw their
sword, and fighting makes an end of the busines; and all this is
controversy. Pray, goe on, Sir.

_Thom_. Two paire of Tables.--Tables for what?

_Tho_. Oh, sir, for ticktack. You know it was in my note, which though I
doubted at first, yet considering you were newly made a Cap: I conceiv'd
it was fitt you should leerne to sett and or[d]er your men.

_Thom_. Tacticks, man: thou didst mistake, they are bookes of warre.

_Tho_. You cannot know these from bookes as they are painted,
I warrant you.

_Thom_. Why, dost thou thinke theis will make a Souldier?
Tho_. Not of themselves, Sir, and therefore I provided: please you read on, Sir.

Un_. _Parsons Resolutions_ and _Felthams Resolves_[241].

Tho_. All is nothing I knew, Sir, without resolution.

Un_. Summa totalis three and twenty poundes nyneteeene shillings and sevengence.--Thou hast undone mee.

Tho_. If you doe not like the pennyworths tis but the charges of my selfe and a horse agen to _London_. I will lose but the three odd pounds 19s and 7d: it may be you doe not understand these Authors: when the Captaine comes he will expound 'em to you.

Un_. What a Coxcombe have I to my man! but I dare not be angry with him. Well, carry 'em into my study, _Thomas_.

[Ext. Tho_.

Enter Device_.

De_. Most honor'd Captaine.

Un_. My compleat Monsier _Device_, this is a grace to us. You come to visit your Mistres my Cosen. As if by instinct she had knowledge of your approach, she is come to meet you.--Shall I never get opportunitie with that shee waiter! If I gett her with Child my man _Thomas_ shall marry her.

Enter Thomas_.

Tho_. Sir, the Captaine is new alighted.

Un_. Gett a bottle of sack up to my Chamber presently.

[Ext. [Underwit & Thomas_.

La_. You are a gentleman of your word.

Sis_. And such a gentleman is to be trusted, Madam.

De_. He is an Infidell that will breake his word with a Ladie.

Sis_. I suspect, servant, you have many Mistresses.

De_. Not I, by this white hand. I must acknowledge there are some Ladies in the Court in whose eyes and opinion I am favour'd. I cannot obscure my selfe from their observation; but my heart with contempt of all other endeerement is only devoted to your service.

Sis_. Is't not a charge to dresse your selfe with such variety of Ribbands every day?

De_. Is that your scruple? Tis the Mode to express our fancie upon every occasion; to shew the turne and present state of our hope or feares in our Affection. Your colours to an understanding Lover carry
the interpretation of the hart as plainly as wee express our meaning one to another in Characters. Shall I decipher my Colours to you now? Here is Azure and Peach: Azure is constant, and Peach is love; which signifies my constant Affection.

_Sis_. This is very pretty.

_De_. Oh, it saves the trouble of writing, where the Mistres and Servant are learned in this amorous blazon. Yesterday I wore Folimort, Grisdelin and Isabella: Folimort is withered, Grisdelin is absent, and Isabella is beauty, which put together express I did wither or languish for your absent beautie.

_Sis_. But is there any reason for theis distinctions?

_De_. Yes, Lady: for example, your Follimort is a withred leafe, which doth moralise a decay: your yellow is joy, because--

_La_. Why, yellow, Sir, is Jealous.

_De_. No, your Lemon colour, a pale kind of yellow, is Jealous; your yellow is perfect joy. Your white is Death, your milke white innocence, your black mourning, your orange spitefull, your flesh colour lascivious, your maides blush envied, your red is defiance, your gold is avaritious, your straw plenty, your greene hope, your sea greene inconstant, your violet religious, your willow forsaken.

_Sis_. We may then comitt a solecisme and be strangely interpreted by such curious expounders in the rash election and wearing of our colours, I perceive.

_La_. Tis pitty but there should be some bookes for our instruction in this art.

_De_. Your Hierogliphick was the _Egyptian_ wisdome, your _Hebrew_ was the Cabala, your _Roman_ had your Simball or impresse; but they are now obsolete, your embleme trite and conspicuous, your invention of Character and Alphabeticall key tedious and not delightfull, your motto or rebus too open and demonstrative: but the science and curiosity of your Colours in Ribbands is not only instructive but an ornament and the nearest Comentator of Love; for as Love is entertain'd first by the eye, or, to speake more plaine, as the object affected is tooke in first by these opticks which receive the species of the thing colord & beautifide, so it is answerable to nature that in the progresse of our passion we should distinguish by our eye the change or constancy of our affections in apt and significant colours.

_Sis_. You have tooke paines to study this learn'd heraldry.

_De_. It is the onely gentile knowledge or philosophie in the world. I will undertake to open any man or womans hart.

_La_. Heaven forbid!

_De_. Tell the most secret imaginations and designes conclude every passion and scruple, if they be carefull to observe the artificiall method of their colours.

_Sis_. Why, this may be a way of fortune telling too.
_De_. You say right, Lady: phisiognomy and chiromancy are but trifles; nay, your geomancie meere coniecturall, the execution of your schemes circumstantiall and fallible, but your quaint alamode weare of your fancie more then astrologicall.

_La_. Tis a kind of Divinitie.

_De_. You say very true, Madam, and comes neere to propheticall if the minds of Ladies and gentlemen were elevated to the just and sublime consideration.

_Sis_. What paines he takes to be ridiculous!

_Do_. This gentleman has a notable fancie and talkes poetically.

_Sis_. Yes, yes; he can write verses.

_Do_. Well, I have read Authors in my dayes and knew the length of the poets in my tyme too, which was an hexameter and which a pentameter, but the wits are not as they have been--right and straite.

_Sis_. Why, _Doroty_?

_Do_. Why, because wind is the cause of many things; now if the wind bee not in the right corner tis the ill wind our proverbe speakes of that blowes nobodie good; for when vapors and wind flie into the head it cannot be in two places at one time: and that's the reason your men of most wit doe seldome love a woman.--But here comes my Master and Sir _Francis_.

_Enter Sir Richard and Sir Francis, and Mr. Courtwell_.

_Ri_. This is a double honour to us, _Sir Francis_. I shall want language, but not a friendly hart to entertaine you and your noble kinsman. What my exquisite Cavalier _Device_!--tis to no purpose I see to remove into the Countrey to save charges and be quiet; the whole Citty will come hither if I stay. I have no stomack to my kn't.

_Fra_. I hope, madam, you will be no enemy to my kinsman.

_Ri_. Sister, I present this gentleman; observe and cherish him; he has been i'th Universitie.

_Sis_. Any degree, Sir?

_Co_. Onely Bachelour, forsooth!

_Ri_. If he winne you to marriage, Lady quicksilver--

_Sis_. He wilbe Master of his Art.

_Ri_. My vote is for him.

_De_.--I like not the induction of this rivall.

_Ri_. He studies now the law, And thats the high way to preferment, Sister.
_Sis_. Indeed it is the high way in which some
Deliver up their purses. He may clime
To scarlet, but that he has too good a face.

_De_. Sir, I hope--

_Ri_. Troth, do not, Sir,--I meane, trouble yourseflfe:
He is too bashfull to prevaile upon
Your spirited mistres!

_Enter Mr. Engine_.

_En_. Sir _Richard_.

_Ri_. More customers? Mr. _Engine_, welcome;
Your presence was unexpected in the Countrey.

_En_. Twas my ambition with some intents
To serve you, sir. Please you vouchsafe your privacie,
I bring Affaires are worth your entertainement:
I have rid hard.

_Cou_. What Cavallier's this, Uncle?

_Fra_. He is the inventor of new proiects, cosen,
They say, and patents; one that lives like a moth
Upon the Common wealth.

_Cou_. He lookes like one.

_Ric_. You will excuse me, gentlemen.--Make much of Sir _Francis_, Madam.

__Ext. [Sir Richard and Engine__.

_Cou_. Weele leave my Nephew and your sister, Madam,
And take a turne i'th garden.

_Sis_. You may be confident.

____Exeunt Sir Francis, Lady, and Dorothy__.

_De_.--I doe not like the fancie in his hat;
That gules is warre and will be ominous.

__Ext. [Device__.

_Sis_. The gentleman's turnd statue! blesse me how
He staires upon me and takes roote, I thinke.
It mooves, and now to earth is fixt agen;
Oh, now it walkes and sadly marches this way.
Is't not a ghost? hele fright me. Oh, sweet sir,
Speake if you can and say who murderd you.
It points at me: my eyes? ungentle eyes
To kill so at first sight! Ile have my lookes
Arraigned for't and small _Cupid_ shall be judg,
Who for your sake will make me blind as he is.

_Co_. Ladie--
_Sis_. The man's alive agen and has
A tongue! discretion guide it; he but sent
His soule forth of an arrand; tis returnd,
Now wee shall have some sentences.

_Co_. Such are the strange varieties in love,
Such heates, such desperate coldes,—

_Sis_. No more winter, and you love me, unlesse you can command the
collepis; we have had a hard tyme on't already for want of fuell.

_Co_. I'me all turnd eares and, Lady, long to heare you,
But pressing to you doubt I am too neare you.
Then I would speake, but cannot; nought affordes
Expression, th'Alphabet's too poore for wordes:
He that knowes Love knowes well that every hower
Love's glad, Love's sad, Love's sweet--

_Sis_. And sometymes sower. Theis wordes would goe well to a tune; pray
letts heare you sing. I doe not thinke but you can make me a ioynture of
fower nobles a yeare in Balletts, in lamentable balletts; for your wit I
thinke lies tragicall. Did you make the _Ladies Downefall_[242].
You expresse a passion rarely, but pray leave
Your couplets and say something in blanck verse
Before you goe.

_Co_. Before I goe? breath not that killing language:
There is no sunne but in your eyes, and when
I once take leave of those celestall beames
I meet with darkenes in my habitation;
Where stretch'd on sable ground I downe shall lay
My mounefull body, and with folded Armes
Heare sadder noats uppon the _Irish_ harpe[243]
And drop division with my brinish teares.[244]

_Sis_. This must be lamentable musick sure!

_Co_. But I have found an art to cure this wound,
For I with fancys pencill will so draw
Your picture in the table of my hart,
Your absence shall but like darke shadowes stand
To sett you of and see you, Lady, better
Then Love will lett me when I looke upon you.

_Sis_. Could this be true and meant, sweet sir, to me,
I should be kinder then the gentlest spring
That warms the world and makes fierce beasts so tame
And trees to swell themselves to cheerefull greene;
More jocund then the proudest quire of birds,
What ere they be that in the woods so wide
Doe sing their merry catches.--Sure he does
But counterfeit.

_Co_. Oh, now I see that Love
Is sweet as flowers in their fragrant birth,
Gentle as silke, and kind as Cloudes to Earth?

_Sis_. One rime more and you undoe my love for ever. Out upon't! pedlars
_French_[245] is a Christian language to this. I had rather you should
put me a case out of _Litleton_. They say you are a pretty Lawyer.

__Co__. Tenant[246] per la Curtesie d'Engleterre est, hon home prent feme seisie in fee simple ou en fee taile generall, ou seisie comme heire de la taile special et ad issue per mesme la fame, male ou female, oies ou wife, soit lissie apres mort ou en vie si la feme de aie, la baron tiendra la terre durant sa vie, per la ley dengleterre.

__Sis__. Nay, here's enough a Conscience! What a Noise this confusion of languages make; tis almost as good as a beare baiting. Harke you, Sir, you are never like to recover me by law.

__Co__. You are not the first sweet Ladie has been overthrowne at Common Lawe.

__Sis__. Not by tenn thousand, Sir. Confest: but I have no mind to come to issue with a Lawyer; when he should consider my cause at home, heele be at _Westminster_, teaching men the Statutes. No, no, I wo'not marry a Judge.

__Co__. Why, Lady?

__Sis__. They are casuall things and men that hold such strange opinions.

__Co__. Lady, you may be misinform'd: _Astraea_
Hath not quite left the earth, and the abuses
Of some which shame the calling are but like
Patches of beauty on the shape of lawe
To set the whitenes of.

__Sis__. Farewell, Sir:
You are in love with a barrd gown, not beauty;
If you will be my learned Counsell, leave it
--This yong thing is a foole or a fine fellow. __Exit__.

__Co__. She kicks and flings out like a Colt unwayed;
Her witt's a better portion then her money;
I would not love her yet, and I could help it.--
My Uncle and his Mistres: Ile not hinder em.

__Ex__.

[SCENE 3.]

__Enter Sir Francis and Ladie__.

__La__. It is no honour, Sir, if arm'd with so
Much eloquence you overcome a woman.
I blush to say I love you now too much;
I wish you would release what your sweet charmes
Won from my tongue; I shall repent my promise.

__Fra__. Make me not miserable after so much blessing.
Why, Madam, tis on honourable tearmes,
Since not upon the first attempt but after
A tedious seige in to your faire love you give up
What shall enrich us both. It were a sinne
To feare you can retract what both our lipps
Have seal'd, and loose a happines so neare
And so secure. Your husband holds his pleasure
Of early hunting constant, and when he
Pursues the tumerous hare to morrow morne,
_Cupid_ will wait to bring me to _Elizium_.
Your bed, where every kisse shall new create us.

_La_. You must be wise in your excuse, to quit
His importunitie.

_Fra_. Leave that to me:
I weare not worth the name of him that serv'd you
To loose my glorious hope for want of such
A thinne device. In your thought wish me prosper,
And I am fortifide against the power
Of fate to seporate us; and when thou art
Within the amorous circle of my armes,
We will make lawes to love; teach him new motion
Or chaine[247] him with the cordage of his haire,
Like a tame thing, to walke, and watch our pillow
And be our pleasures Centinell.

_La_. I see
My husband; tis not safe he should observe us:
Be wise and constant. _Exit Lady_.

_Fra_. All that's sweet attend thee.
So I am sailing now to my owne _Indies_.
And see the happie Coast, too: How my wings
Doe spread to catch the wind which comes to court 'em,
And the green Sea, enamour'd on my barke,
Doth leap to see how _Cupid_ sitts at helme.
And steeres my soule to his new world.

_Enter Sir Richard and Engine_.

_Ri_. A monopolie say you
For Perriwigs?

_En_. Is't not a rare designe? and by such art
And reasons I can name, most beneficill
To the common wealth, preventing the diseases
Which some unwholsome haire breeds in mens heads,
It will be worth our agitation, Sir;
And you, after the rate of every thousand
Per Annum milk'd out of the comon purse
Into your owne, may easily defaulte
To me a hundred for my first projection.
Did I not love you, Sir, I could make choice
Of other able men that would be glad
To multiplie their money.

_Ri_. Sir, I thanke you,
But have no mind to thrive upon abuse of
My princes favour nor the peoples curse.
Here is a gentleman, Sir _Francis Courtwell_,
Perhapps will undertake it.
_Fra_. What, Sir _Richard_?

_Ri_. A Monopolie for composeing and selling of perriwiggs.

_Fra_. Excuse me, Sir, I dare not deale in 'em.
If I be not mistaken, Sir, your name
Is _Engine_?

_En_. Yes, Sir.

_Fra_. The proiector generall?
If I may advise you, Sir, you should make your will,
Take some convenient phisick and dye tymely
To save your credit, and an execution:
It is thought else--

_En_. Oh--

_Fra_. What aile you, Sir?

_En_. A Megrim in my head.

_Ri_. Whoes there?

_Enter Thomas_.

Looke to Mr. _Engine_ heere, he faints, and send
To your Ladie for some Cordiall waters presently.

_Tho_. There is a Soveraigne Well hard by has done
Strange cures: please you, ile throw him into that.

_Ext. [Thomas; carrying away Engine_.

_Ri_. Though I distast his busines I wod not
He should miscarry here; you frighted him.
But come, I thinke tis supper tyme, Sir _Francis_.
I shall expect youle hunt with me i' th morning;
I have a pack of Doggs sent me will make
The Forrest ring.

_Fra_. Ile cheerfully attend you,
I love the sport; as earlie as you please, Sir.

_Ri_. I wish wee had all pleasures to delight you,
But no thing wants in my true love to serve you.

_Fra_.--Yet I must cuckold him; I cannot helpe it.

_Act the Third_.

_Enter Thomas with Sir Richards bootes_.

_Tho_. Sir.
Within Ri. Whoes that? _Thomas_?

_Tho_. The sun is up before you. Here be your bootes.

_Ri_. That's well.

Within La_. I preethe donot rise yet; it is hardly day. Sirra, who bid you call him so earlie? Sir _Richard_ wonot rise yet.

_Tho_. I cannot helpe it, it is none of my fault.

_La_. Wheres _Doroty_?

_Enter Doroty_.

_Do_. Here, Madam; what make you up so soone, _Thomas_?

_Tho_. O Mistres _Dority_, tis e'ne long of you, for betweene sleepe and awake your remembrance came to me this morning, and _Thomas_ was up presently.

_Enter Sir Richard [& Lady]_.

_Ri_. You must excuse me, wife;
I meane to kill a brace of hares before
You thinke tis day. Come, on with my Bootes, _Thomas_; And _Dorothy_ goe you to Sir _Francis_ Chamber,
Tell him the Day growes old and I am readie,
Our horses and the merry hounds expect us.

_La_. Any excuse to leave me.

_Ri_. You may take
Your ease a bed still, Madam. Ile not loose
One morning that invites so pleasantly,
To heare my Doggs, for a new Maidenhead, I.
Twas for these sports and my excess of charge
I left the towe: besides the Citty foggs
And steame of Brick hills almost stifled me;
This Aire is pure and all my owne.

_Tho_. My Ladie
Meanes shee would have you gett another heire,
Sir, for your lands; though it be against my Master
The young Captaine, yet she speakes but reason.
And now I talke o'th Captaine, Sir,
Would you had given him Counsell.

_Ri_. To what?

_Tho_. Before he tooke this huffing[248] trade upon him,
To have been a man of peace, I meane a Justice.
Nature has made him fit for both alike.
Hee's now at charge to keepe a Captaine Schoolemaster;
He might have sav'd the qua[r]teridge of his Tutor
If I had been his Clarke: and then the income
That broken heads bring in, and new yeares guifts
From soder'd virgins and their shee provintialls
Whose warren must be licenc'd from our office!
Away you prating knave.--

_Enter Dorothy._

What? is he readie?

_Do_. Alas, hee's almost dead.

_Ri_. How? dead?

_Do_. He has been troubled with a fitt o'th stone,
Sir, all this night. Sweet gentleman he groanes,
And sweates, and cannot--

_Ri_. What?

_Do_. Make urine, Sir.

_Tho_. I heard my Ladie has an excellent
Receipt to cure the Stone; she is a peece
Of a rare Surgeon.

_Ri_. Well, away and get the horses readie, sirra,
For I shall ride you and your witt together.

_Tho_. Alas, any foole may ride me, but I would
faine see any man ride Mistres _Dorothy_.

_Do_. How, sirra?

[Exit Thomas_.

_Ri_. I am sorry I must leave such a Companion.
But more lament the cause. I wish him health;
My presence cannot serve him. Morrow, wife:
I cannot lose my sport. [Exit_.

_Do_. Nor shee when you are gone.
My Lady does expect another hunt's up.

_La_. Now I must trust thy secularie.

_Do_. You shall not doubt me, Madam, and t'assure you
My faith, I have a suit to your Ladiship
Whose grant, were there no other bonds upon me,
Would tye me everlastinglie to silence.

_La_. What ist? but name, and I shall soone confirme thee.

_Do_. Our Captaine o'th traind band has been offerig
To chaffer Maidenheads with me. I must
Confesse I can affect the foole upon
Good tearmes, and could devise a plott to noose
My amorous woodcock, if you privatie
Assist me and dare trust me with some Jewell
Of price, that is not knowne, which shalbe faithfully
Restor'd Madam.

_La_. I that dare trust my honour with thee sha'not
Suspect thy faith in any treasure else.
But prethe draw the Curtains close, while I
Expect this friend: I needes must hide my blushes.
Thou maist discover from the Gallory windowe
When they are hors'd. I tremble to consider
What I have promis'd.

_Do_. Tremble to meet a Ghost!
You are more fearefull then a Virgin, Madam.
Why this setts me a longing; but ile watch:
This is the timerous world of flesh and blood.

_Enter_.

_La_. within_. Alas!
What doe you meane? retire for heavens sake!
My husband is not gone, I heare his voice yet;
This rashnes will undoe my fame for ever
Should he returne.

_Ri_. How's this?
"Returne for heavens sake! my husband is not gone:
I heard his voice; this will undoe my fame!"
It was my wife, and this is sure my bed chamber.

_La_. (_looking forth_) I have undone my selfe; it is my husband.

_Ri_. My forehead sweats: Where are you, Madam?
Whome did you talke too or take me for? ha! Asleepe
Alreadie, or doe I dreame? I am all wonder.
Madam,--

_La_. You may kill him and please you, sweet heart;
I cannot abide a Blackamore.

_Ri_. How's this, wife?

_La_. Helpe, helpe, deare husband, strangle him with one
Of my Lute strings; doe, doe, doe.

_Ri_. If shee be a sleepe she was not us'd to talke thus:
She has some hideous dreame. She spake to me, to;
Whom should I strangle, sweet hart, with a lute string?

_La_. The King of _Morocco_, I thinke.

_Ri_. Tis so, she dreams. What strange Chimeras wee
Doe fancie in our sleepe! I were best wake her.
Madam, Madam!

_La_. O Murder, Murder!

_Ri_. Sweet heart, Madam, wake!

_La_. Whoes that?

_Ri_. Tis I.
_La_. Sir _Richard_? Oh you have delivered me
From such a dreame I quake to thinke upon't.

_Ri_. I must confesse you frighted me at first.

_Enter Dorothy_.

_Do_.--My Master come back? if he had found the [sic] Sir _Francis_ here!

_Ri_. How now? art thou frighted too?

_Do_. Frighted, quoth a! Oh, Madam, the key of the Closet quickly. I
must have some Cordiall water for Sir _Francis_; I feare this fitt will
kill him.

_La_. Alas, good gentleman! make hast.

_Do_.--His appearance would betray all: I thus prevent it.

_La_. Nay, sweet hart, you sha'not leave me till I ha told
What a cruell Dreame I had. Methought a king
Of Blackamores was in love with me, and haveing
By flattering Courtship drawne me to his bed chamber,
With my consent or force swore to enjoy mee.
I knew not by what reasons to divert
The Ravisher, but told him that I heard
Thy voice, and bid him if he lov'd his life
Retire, for thou wouldst deere revenge my honour.
But he pursuing me, I cry'd out Murder!
At which sad noise methought I saw thee enter,
But, having nere a sword, I counsell'd thee
To strangle him with a Lute string, for which cruelty
Of mine, me thought he threw an Arrow at me,
Which, if thou hadst not wak'd me as thou didst,
Would as I slept with my strong feares ha kill'd me.

_Ri_. This was the King of _Morocco_: well, I'me glad
I came to take away thy fright.

_La_. But, sweet, you left me with a resolution
To hunt this morning. Have you done already?

_Ri_. The theeves prevented me.
My Stable has been rob'd to night; two geldings
And my roane Nagg are vanished.

_La_. How?

_Ri_. Nay, doe not thou vexe:
I have sent hue and cry that may oretake 'em.
But come, Ile leave thee to my glasse,
And visit Sir _Francis_ now shees return'd.--

_Enter Dorothy_.

How does our Noble guest?

_Do_. Hees pretty well: he has voided one stone since
And now finds ease.
_Ri_. Tis well: attend your Mistres. _Exit_.

_La_. O, wench, I had almost undone my selfe,  
Come o'tother side, reach me that peticote;  
Ile tell the storie as I make me ready.  

_Ex[eun]t_.

[SCENE 2.]

_Enter Device, Sister_.

_Sis_. Ist possible you can talke thus and be no travailer?

_De_. I have traveld in my fancie, Ladie, and with the Muses, and do for  
my recreation of witt compose some wonders in verse, poeticall essaies,  
as once upon the report of a heate that was in _Egipt_.

_Sis_. Lets heare 'em.

_De_. _In Countreys I have been  
Under the Equinoctiall, where I have seene  
The Sunne disperse such a prodigious heat  
That made our sive-like skins to raine with sweat.  
Men would have given for an Ecclipse their lives,  
Or one whisper of Aire; yet each man strives  
To throw up grasse, feathers, nay women, too,  
To find the wind: all falls like lead, none blew.  
The Dogstarre spits new fire till't came to passe  
Each eye became his neighbours burning glasse.  
Leane men did burne to ashes presentlie,  
Fatt men did wast to leane Anatomye;  
Young womens heat did gett themselves with child,  
For none but they themselves themselves defild;  
Old women naturally to witches turne,  
And onely rubbing one another burne.  
The beasts were bak'd, skin turnd to crust, they say,  
And fishes in the River boild away.  
Birds in the aire were rosted and not burn'd,  
For, as they fell downe, all the way they turn'd_.

_Sis_. Most excellent!

_De_. I have seene Larkes in that motion at fire  
With an Engine of packthread perpendicular.

_Sis_. What would they have given for a shower in those Cuntries?

_De_. Now you talke of a Shower you shall heare  
Another coppie of Verses that I made  
Of a mighty raine which fell once in the _Indies_.

_Sis_. That you made? If you will venture your lungs let me heare more  
impossible stories to passe away the tyme.
De. Heaven did not weep, but in its swelling eye
Whole Seas of Rhume and moist Catarrs did lie,
Which so bespauld the lower world, men see
Corne blasted and the fruit of every tree;
Aire was condenst to water against their wish,
And all their foule was turn'd to flying Fish;
Like watermen they throng'd to ply a fare,
As though it had been navigable Aire.
Beasts lost the naturall motion of each limbe,
Forgott to goe with practiseing to swime:
A trout now here you would not thinke how soone
Taken and drest for th'Emperour o'the Moone,
The fixed Starres, though to our eyes were missing
Wee knew yet were by their continuall hissing.
Weomen were mermaides sailing with the wind,
The greatest miracle was fish behind:
But men were all kept chast against their wish,
And could comitt but the cold sin of fish.

Sis. And that synne would puzzle all the Civell Lawyers in the
kingdome. Sinns of the flesh they are perfect in; they know well enough
what belongs to Adultery and simple fornication, but you would much
improve and oblige the practise of the Court, if you could bring this
sinne of fish under the Commission. But now, I hope, the raine is over
we shall have faire weather.

De. Now I can tell you, Lady, what a strange frost was in one part of
the world--

Sis. I shall cry out fire if you doe; I had rather have some discourse
to keepe me warm still.

De. Or how the whole world was troubled with the wind Collick.

Sis. No more Earthquakes, I beseech you. Some frends of myne lost a
great deale of land the last terme, and for ought I know tis never like
to be recover'd. Why, all these verses you have honourd me to heare were
translated out of _French_.

De. You say very right, Lady.
Sis. No, no; they are out of _Spanish_, as I remember.
De. I thinke it be out of _Spanish_, indeed.
Sis. Or else the _Italian_.
De. Troth, I know not which very well.
Sis. And yet you made 'em! Some gentlemen have the faculty to make
verses and forgett what language was the Original: tis Alamode, I
confesse, sir.

De. Thers the mischiefe in poetry: a man might have told 200 lies in
prose upon his owne name, and never miscaried.--But, leaving these rude
rymes, Ladie, how do you like the novice that Sir _Richard_ comended.

Sis. Mr. _Courtwell_?
_De_. Is he not a pretty Chrisome[249]? I could not choose but laugh to observe in what rurall deportment he came to salute you, that should have made his address in thes postures.

_Sis_. Tis enough, sir; I apprehend what you would doe. The truth is, touching that thing in black, I doe not love him.

_De_. I know't; tis impossible.

_Sis_. Why is't impossible? The man's a pretty indifferent meaning man, but I must have one of a more active spiritt. No, no, the man's a Coward.

_De_. He lookes like one.

_Sis_. I put him to't, he dares not fight; and he that expects my favour to so high a degree as marriage must be none of my lord Maiors whifflers[250]; he must be valiant in Armes. I am not taken with a ring or Caskanet, as some avaritious Ladies; he that presents me with the sword of his rivall is more welcome then all the silken soft natur'd six hundreds a yeere, that will be baffeld in their best clothes and goe downe into the Country every Vacacon like Attorneys to be beaten against next terme and get damage by it, but I forget some affaires that concerne me. I take my leave. Your deserts upon me are eminent and many, and for all your noble services I--will promise you nothing: you apprehend me?

_De_. O, sweet Lady, tis too much.

_Sis_. I am so weary I can stay no longer w'ee.  

_De_. You make mee over happie.--So, so; the matters done. I may write my friends. Hum: well thought upon! I shall leave her joyes without any bound to entertaine me if I first beat this foolish rivall of mine and present her with his sword. She assures me he dares not fight: it shall be so. Thus with one baffling and disarming him I shall secure my Mistresse and get the reputation of a fighting Cavallier, which may save me many a knock hereafter among men of strong faith that shall heare how much honour I have elsewhere taken upon the ticket.

[SCENE 3.]

_Enter Captaine and Underwit_.

_Un_. Stand right to your files, make even your rankes, silence!
Front to the right hand.
As you were.
To the right hand about.
By the left hand.
As you were.
Rankes to the right double.
Rankes as you were.
Rankes to the left double.
Midlemen to the right hand double the front; as you were,--to the left,--double the front; middle-men to the right entire [or[251] by division] double the front; files to the right,--to the left,--to the right hand
countermarch,—to the right,—to the left,—wheele about—

_Cap_. Ran tan: enough,—you must not wast your lunges
Too much at once. March faire and make a Captaine.
When these words of Command are rotten (rooted?) wee
Will sowe some other military seeds.
You beare[252] a braine and memory.

_Un_. I hope so.

[_Cap_[253]] And now you are chose a Captaine for your Countrey
You must give good example to your Soldiers
And cherish nature after exercise:
You must drinke sack, sack is a fortifier.
Come, wee'le to the taverne.

_Un_. With all my heart.

[Enter Mr. Courtwell_.

Here's Mr. _Courtwell_: lett's take him with us.

_Cap_. My costive Countrey man? hee's an Anabaptist: he wonot drinke,
and yet kist the Cupp of last night, me thought, when his Mistres--
drank to him: wee'le try. How ist, my man of mortall breeding?

_Cou_. My man of warre, trebonn.—Your servant, Captaine.

_Cap_. Why, this was spoke like one of us; canst doo't
Agen? thy voice is more authentick, soundes
As I have heard a Cavalliers in taverne.
Or like the merry master of the _Dragon_,
Small _Neptune_, that controlls the rich Canaries,
When he Comaunds the Tritons of his cellar
'Skud, and bring wine, you varlotts, with a flavour
For my Nobilitie.' Wee were conspiring
To goe to'th taverne.

_Cou_. Ile make one, gentlemen, to wash away some melancholy.

_Cap_. Spoke boldlie, like an _Argonaute_.

_Cou_. I am not now in _London_,
Upon a hall day marching with the puisnes,
Twenty on's in a teame, to _Westminster_,
In our torne gownes, embroiderd with _Strand_ dirt,
To heare the Law.

_Cap_. Is not thy father dead, thou talkst so well?
How I was cosend in thee: come away.

_Enter Thomas_.

_Un_. Here's my man _Thomas_.

_Cap_. Now the Newes, Sir _Tristram_.

_Tho_. Oh the Gentleman is mad.
"Un_. What gentleman?"

"Tho_. Why, Mr. Engine that did faint last night."

"Un_. With feare of being hang'd for his projections."

"Cou_. My Uncle told me of him."

"Cap_. Let him to _Bedlam_ then; what makes he here? Clean straw and a good whip are held restoratives."

"Tho_. He walkes and talkes the madliest; twenty midwives Are nothing to him, he drownes all their noise. His tongue is twenty ring of Bells, and yett He seemes so merry.

"Enter Engine_."

"En_. Save you, gentlemen, gallants, Cavalliers. How farre travell you: me thinkes you are very finely accomodated. Are you a Doctor, sir?"

"Cap_. No, but I can tell you how to purge, and please you."

"En_. You say very well. Troth, gentlemen you must pardon me: cry you mercy, your name is Captaine _Underwit_."

"Un_. Yes, sir, but my mother came of the _Over-muches_ by the _Peake_. She broke my father's hart, and Sir _Richard_ buried her: things must be as please the starres.

"En_. What thinke you of the blazeing starre in _Germany_? according to _Ptolmy_ tis very strange. Does the race hold at _Newmarket_ for the Cup[254]? When is the Cocking, gentlemen? There are a parcell of rare Jewells to be sold now, and a man had money. I doe mean to build a very fine house next summer and fish ponds. What did you heare of the new play. I am afraid the witts are broke; there be men will make affidavit that [they] have not heard a good jest since _Tarleton_[255] dyed. Pray, may I crave your name, sir?"

"Cou_. My name is _Courtwell_, sir."

"En_. In your eare; I have a cast of the best Marlins[256] in England, but I am resolv'd to goe no more by water but in my Coach. Did you ever see the great ship?[257]"

"Cap_. I have been one of twenty that have dind in her lanterne.

"En_. It may be so; she is a good sailer. But ile tell you one thing: I intend to have the best pack of hounds in _Europe_; Sir Richard loves the sport well. And then if I can but find out the reason of the loadstone I were happie and would write _Non Ultra_.

"Cap_. The philosophers stone were better in my opinion. Have you no project to gett that?

"Cou_. That has startled him: I doubt this fellow does but counterfeit.

"Un_. What thinke you of the Dromedary that was to be seene at the back side[258] of the _Bell_."
_En_. I have seene a stranger beast.

_Cap_. So have I; I have seene you before now, sir.

_En_. Why then, ile tell you: the strangest beast that ever I saw was an Ostridge that eate up the Iron mynes. But now you talke of birds I saw an Elephant beat a Taylor in the fenceing schoole at his owne weapon.

_Tho_. The _Spanish_ needle?

_En_. He did out eat him in bread, and that was miraculous. I have seene a Catamountaine[259] once; but all was nothing to the wench that turnd round and thred needles.

_Cou_. Troth, sir, I thinke you have turnd round, too, and are not setted yet.

_En_. Now you talke of setling I knew a gentleman, that was borne to a good fortune, sold all his land, went to sea in a _Hollander_, was taken by the _Dunkirke_; at seaven yeares end stole away in an _English_ botome; after that saw both the _Indies_; for all this was taken by a _Turks_ man of warre, put into the Gallies, and for ought I heare by credible report is not setled yet.

_Tho_. Sure he is a great scholler; a man cannot understand him.

_Un_. His braines are out of tune.

_En_. Now you talke of Musick theres no man in the world loves musick better then I,--ile give you the reason: I have been deafe almost this halfe yeare, and it came with a cold sitting up a primero.

_Co_. Now you talke of the cold it puts me in mind of the new device of fire for brewing and bakeing. Had you no hand in the project?

_Cap_. Againe hees startled: come, he shall to taverne with us and confess all. If he do not strip his soule stark naked to us, say I am no fortune teller.--Please you to honour our society: we are going to indulge at the taverne hard by.

_En_. You shall comand me, sir. Oh the Neats tongues and partargoes that I have eaten at Stillyard, but of all things in the world I do not love a black catt: next a brewers cart, there's nothing will stay a man so much in the night as a Constables. One word before you go, and I beseech you give me your opinion cleereely: was not the _Morocco_ Ambasadour a very fine gentleman for a pagan?

_Cap_. Yes, surely, and the lead mines in _Darbishire_ hold still for the Allom businesses. But come; will you walke, Sir?

_En_. I do use to goe a foote sometymes but when I ride; and then I must confesse there is no striving with the streame. You were in _London_ lately: they say the people are more affected to beare baiting then in former tyme.

_Cap_. There are some a late are drawne like beares to the stake; but for your owne part the gout and the grand pox are all one to you. What price beare[s] meat in the shambles?
Flesh rises and falls as it us'd to doe, sir; but a Countrey life is the best when all's done. What thinke you of a bridg from _Lion_ key to _Flaunders_? You may guess I talke at randum, gentlemen; but you must not interpret all foolish discourse a distemper of the braine: Lords would take it for a _Scandalum Magnatum_ and your Ladies would bee angry too.

__Enter Sir Francis and Lady__. Now you talke of Ladies--

__Cap__. By no meanes, Mr. __Engin__; that gentleman loves you not. Come, ile bring up the rere. Where's __Thomas__?

___ Exit Underwit, Captain, Courtwell and Engine. ___

__Tho__. Ile follow, sir.--I would give my fower marks a yeare that I could talke like that mad gentleman. Hee's here and there and everywhere. How will his tongue run when his Coggs are oild; theile drench him! ___ Exit. ___

__Fra__. Although I mist a happines, I applaud Your nimble wit that securd both our honours. You have an excellent Instrument too o' your gentlewoman.

__La__. Oh she deliver'd to the life how you Were troubled with the Stone. At first I did Beleev't my selfe, and thinke of the sad consequence. But tyme is pretious now: although our Starres Have not been yet propitious to our meeting Ile try my art to night to make 'em shine. With happie influence on our Loves.

__Fra__. Most excellent Madam, how?

__La__. Ile not engage Your visit to my chamber, since the first Prov'd so unfortunate, but come to youres.

__Fra__. This night? wonot your husband be at home.

__La__. Yes.

__Fra__. You enjoy but one bed.

__La__. Without witchcraft, sir, I have a stratageme to delude my husband And all his jealous waking eyes, a plott That cannot faile if you dare but expect me.

__Fra__. I grow immortall with my hopes and fancie More than the worlds most pretious Empire in Our first embrace. I should runne back into An Infant once age, and by degrees And tyme grow up to meet so vast a happines. Ages in expectation spent were poore And easy sufferings weigh'd against this triumph! Methinkes I am not man but something of
A more exalted essence: humane nature
Hath not capacity to understand
And owne theis spatiovs blessings.

_La_. No more rapture;
But with the confidence of a lover spread
Your equall thoughts, and in your heart and armes
Prepare an entertainement for that guest
That hath no life or name but what you give.
A kisse! and leave our soules to thinke upon
The joyes this night attend us.

_Fra_. Sullen day,
Do not tire now; tis downhill all the way.

[Exeunt severally_.

_Act the Fourth_.

[SCENE 1.[260]]

[_[Captain,[261] Underwit, Courtwell and Musicians,
discovered in the Tavern_]]

_Capt_. Come, my _Apollos_, my _Orpheuses_ or my _Bacchus_ his
Minstrels, which, to leave poetical expressions, in broader phrase
is Taverne fidlers, some of your new tunes, my Masters; doe you heare?

1. Do you meane Mr. _Adson_'s new ayres, Sir?

_Cap_. I, Sir; but they are such phantasticall ayres as it putts a Poet
out of his witts to rhime to them; but let mee heare.

   _Play_.

_Capt_. No, I doe not like that.

   _Play againe_.

_Capt_. Nor that. (_Play againe_)--No, no, no, neither.

1. An't please your Worship, Mr. _Capt_, our Boyes can singe songs
to these.

_Cap_. No, no, saveing your presence, your Boyes have nothing,
sarreverence,[263] but Love songs, and I hate those monstruously, to
make thinges appeare better then they are, and that is but _deceptio
Visus_, which after some embraceings the parties see presently what
it is.

_The Musique Playes_.

(_Hee sings and reeks and fillips all the time
with his finger, then sayees_:)

_Cap_. I, I, this thumping tune I like a life; a Song, a Song to it!
One Singes.
This Song.

The Juice of Spanish squeeze'd Grapes is It
That makes a dull Braine so full of witt;
The Lemonades cleere sparkling wine
The grosser witts too, doth much refine.
Then to bee fox'd[264] it is no crime,
Since thickest and dull Braines It makes sublime.
The Stillyards Reanish wine and Divell's white,
Who doth not in them sometimes take delight?
If with Mimique Gestures you're keep you from sadness,
Then drink lusty Clarett twill put you in Madness;
And then to settle you no hopes in Beer
But wholesome Potts of Scotch ale though its deere_.

_Cap_. But looke you, Child, you say the Divell's white in your Song. You have been ill catechiz'd, Boy, for a _White Divell_ is but a poetical fiction[265]; for the Divell, God bless us, Child, is blacke.

_Boy_. No, Captaine, I say white wine at the Divell.

_Cap_. That's true; thats a good Boy, indeed. _Underwit_, lend mee a Peice to give these harmonious men there. And now begun, my Masters, without noise, for I will have no more fiddle-faddle for my money, no tunes of supererogation after the Musical Bill is paid.

[Exeunt[266] omnes_.

[SCENE 2.]

_Enter Thomas_.

_Tho_. They are all drunk already, and such Confusion in their heads and tongues, my master kisses the next man and calls him Mistres _Dorothy_; Mr. _Courtwell_ , possest with the spirit of defiance to _Cupid_ , is ready to beat him for being in love; my Projector dead drunk in a Chaire, and the Captaine peepeing into his mouth like a tooth drawer and powring downe sack which he feeles not, but his chapps shut againe like a spring lock till he returne with a key to open his teeth, to poure in the next health.

_Enter Courtwell_.

_Cou_. My Cloake and sword, Drawer.

_Tho_. Tis here, sir.

_Cou_. Thou art a pretty fellow; here's half a Crowne, say I am gone _Thomas_.

_Tho_. You are pretty well.

_Enter Captaine and Underwit_.
"Un_. What shall's doe with him; this Engine burnes like _Etna_.

"Cap_. Throw him into the River.

"Un_. Hee's able to mull the _Thames_ well, for my owne part would Mistresse _Dorothy_ were here to open her files.

"Cou_. Did you not name a woman. I will have no mention of any thing that's female.

"Un_. May not a man talke of Sack?

"Cap_. Sack is a soveraigne medicine.

"Un_. Oh very Soveraigne.

"Cap_. Is it not _hic et hec_ sack, both for he and she. Stay, is my Countryman gone? come hither, _Thomas_; do you thinke I am drunke?

"Tho_. Truly, Captaine, I cannot tell.

"Cap_. You cannot tell? there's your ignorance. Drink is a vice I am as little given to as another man, for I doe abhorre it in my selfe. I do wonder how any reasonable man can be drunk; therefore every wise man take Counsell and example by me, and he may see very plainely what an odious thing it is; for you must follow your leader, and vertue, which is an Antient--

"Tho_. Vertue an Antient?

"Cap_. I, an Antient old gentlewoman that is growne very poore, and nobodie knowes where she dwells very hard to find her out, especially for a Capt.; you will find it very difficult for a Livetenent. But wee will endeavour the best wee can; you see my courses, I have travel'd to find her out, and I could never yet see her at a baudihouse.

"Un_. Who is to be seene at a baudihouse? to the right hand countermarch.

"Tho_. He talkes of vertue, sir.

"Un_. Vertue? she never comes there; why do you thinke she should be there, Captaine?

"Cap_. Why, because she is an old gentlewoman and might keepe the house.

"Tho_. Alas, Captaine, Mistris _Vertue_ is poore and leane.

"Cap_. Nay, then she is not fit to be a baud, but tell me did you ever see her, or if so did you ever doo't with her?

"Un_. No, but twas none of my fault; I know not what I may do in time when she understands the wordes of Command.

"Tho_. He does not meane Mistris _Dorothy_; but, Captaine, I would faine know the reason why your baudes are so fat still.

"Cap_. A plaine case: they lie fallow and get hart, then they keepe themselves so in health and so soluble with stewd prunes; and then sipping of sack is a great matter to fatten 'em. But they are as good
people as a man shall keepe company withall, and bring up the young gentlewomen so vertuously. I came into one of their houses tother day for a carreere, and I found the baud sick upon her death bed, very religious and much given to repentance for those poore sins she had commited. When she had taken order for her soule, she told me the young gentlewoman I look'd for was in the next roome; and desiring her upon her blessing to give me content, she turns herselfe to the wall and gives up the ghost very privatly, because she was loth to trouble us.

_Under_. By your relation theis appeare to be very good people. What if we went to visit one of these Matrons? I have a great mind--

_Captain_. Wy, now you speake like an understanding soldier, and one that may come to something in the end. Lett us therefore march on.

_Under_. March on to _Venus_ Warres.

_Captain_. For you know, _Thom_. that the Spider and the Bee, the Spider and the Bee, do both--something, but in troth I have forgott what tis.

_Under_. Tis no matter what; let us goe.

_Captain_. Goe? no more but goe? though I be a Captaine, if I be not chosen in this imployment--

_Thom_. What, then, Captaine?

_Captain_. Why, then--I cannot goe.

_Thom_. Very right; but wo' not those young gentlewomen you talk'd of give a man something to make a man afraid of pepper upon occasion?

_Captain_. You will be prating so long till I breake your head for pretending to that which you have not, sirra.

_Thom_. Alas, I never had it in my life.

_Under_. What's that, Captaine?

_Captain_. Wit, I talke of wit.

_Under_. Who has any wit? does my man offer to have wit?

_Captain_. Nay, take no offence at it, for I meant none to either of you by this sack. Drawer, give me my oath, cannot you drinke without wit? cannot you game without wit?

_Under_. And yet by your favour the gamesters are cald the wits now.

_Captain_. Tis no wit to cozen; confederacy and dishonesty will doo't without wit. Ile iustifie it: do not you know the receit of Cozenage? take an ounce of knavery at the least,--and confederacie is but so many knaves put together,--then you must take a very fine young Codling heire and pound him as small as you can.

_Under_. And what then, Captaine?

_Captain_. Why, then you must cozen him.
_Un_. But which way?

_Cap_. Which way? Why, which way you will: is not cozen him enough? thou art a pretty fellow, ile talke with thee. Thy name's _Thomas_; take heed, I say still, _Thomas_, of being drunke, for it doth drowne the mortall soule; and yours cannot swim, _Thomas_--can it?

_Tho_. Not as I know, Captaine; if it scape fire tis as much as I looke for.

_Within Eng_. Oh--oh--

_Cap_. What's that?

_Tho_. Tis Mr. _Engine_ recovered from his dead sleepe. [_Exit_.

_Un_. D'ee heare, Captaine, for all this I have a great mind to a wench, and a wench I must have if there be one above ground. Oh _London_, London_, thou art full of frank tenements, give me _London_. Shall we wheele about yet?

_Cap_. Give you _London_? Wo'nott _Cheapeside_ serve your turne, or the _Exchange_?

_Enter Thomas_.

_Tho_. Oh, gentlemen, Mr. _Engine_ is surely bewitch'd.

_Cap_. What, what's the matter? bring the witch and Mr. _Engine_ before us.

_Tho_. He does vomit the strangest things yonder.

_Cap_. Did not I say, murder will out?

_Tho_. I thinke he has eaten and drunke nothing but Monopolies, and too hard to be digested they come up againe.

_Within Eng_. Oh!

_Tho_. Harke, I must hold his head. [_Exit_.

_Cap_. Did not I tell you something would come out?

_Tho_. Pins, pins, they lay across his throat. I told you he was bewitch'd. Heyday! cards and dice, out with 'em, the Divells a gamester and paies the box soundly--Now, now, now.

_Un_. Whats that?

_Tho_. Tis something clammy,--now,--oh, tis sope!

_Cap_. Sope? give a man leave to wash his mouth.

_Un_. Does not the lyme burne his throat, _Thomas_?

_Tho_. Alas, poore gentleman, something now agen is ready to strangle him; out with em,--hides, hides,--it was the hornes stuck in his gullett.
Within. Oh--

Tho. Well strain'd; what a foule stomack he has! open your mouth, Mr. Engine.

Cap. Throw downe a pottlepot.

Tho. I have, sir, and it has come up full of medium wine; if you have any charity come and helpe me to hold his head; now agen!

Within. Oh, oh, oh!

Un. This is very strange, Captaine; the man is certainly enchanted.

Tho. Master, master, tis Shrovetuesday[267] and the prentices are pulling downe Covent Garden; the Brickes come as whole out as if he had swallowed Cherristones. Hey! will you take Tobacco in the Roll? here is a whole shiplading of Bermudas and one little twopenny paper of berrinas, with a superscription 'To my very loving friends the Custome-house.'

Cap. Put up that for a relique, Thomas, and open it upon high dayes to clear the sore eyes of our Spanish Marchants. Thomas, no more, but call the Drawer, an understanding Drawer and one that writes orthographie.

[Enter Drawer.]

--Sirra, I charge you set a padlock upon that Chamber doore; there is a dangerous fellow must be brought to his purgation. And looke all the goods that he hath vomitted be forthcomeing, while we discreetly goe and enferme the Magistrates.--At your perill, sirra, at your perill seale up the Doore; and do you pay the reckoninge.

Un. Sir Richard is a Justice. There's your money, and yet wee need not pay; the gentleman hath left enough for the Reckoning in the next Roome.

Un. I ha made him fast, you are very welcome, gentlemen. All's paid in the Percullis.

[Exeunt.

[SCENE 3.]

Enter Courtwell and Sister.

Sis. Ile walke no further; if you have a secret To impart, you need not feare this place; the trees And hedges will not listen. What's the business? I hope your phlegmatick stock of verse is spent.

Cou. Why then in prose, the worst that I can speake in, I doe not love you, Lady.

Sis. How? you ha not
Traind me thus farr to tell me that?

_Cou_. You are
Of all your sex the poorest emptiest trifle,
And one with whome tis most impossible
I ere should change Affection; theres nothing
To invite me too't, not so much as that
Wee call a seeming reason, upon which
All Love is built, seeming, I say, not it,
My understanding Ladie.

_Sis_. You thinke I am very dull that you expound
Your witt thus, but it needes no Comentator,
Not by the Author, tis so very plaine;
But to despise me most of all the sexe
Is something oversaid. Though I affect
No flattery, I hate uncivill Language.
You do not meane to quarrell, now you have
Betraid me to the feilds, and beat me, Sir?

_Cou_. What is there in your face more to attract mee
Then that Red Cowes complexion? Why the Divell
Do you thinke I should dote upon your person?
That thing when she is stroak'd gives milke.

_Sis_. By that
I understand all this revenge, because
You thinke I did neglect you. Pray, sir, tell me,
And tell me seriously, put the Case that I
Should love you now, could not you love agen?

_Cou_. In troth I thinke I could not.

_Sis_. You do but thinke.

_Cou_. Nay, ile bind it with an oath before the parish,
And when I have given my reasons, too, the Clarke
Shall praise me fort and say Amen.

_Sis_. What reasons?

_Cou_. I shall be very loath
To say your eyes are twinckling Starres agen,
Your lipps twin cherries and out blush the rubie,
Your azure veins yve beauty with the Saphire
Or that your swelling breasts are hills of Ivory,
Pillowes for Jove to rest his amorous head,
When my owne Conscience tells me that _Bunhill_
Is worth a hundred on 'em, and but _Higate_
Compar'd with 'em is Paradice. I thanke you;
Ile not be vexed and squeez'd about a rime
Or in a verse that's blanke, as I must be,
Whine love unto[268] a tune.

_Sis_. This all your feare?

_Cou_. No, I doe feare to loose my tyme, my businesse,
And my witts too, jolting them all away
To waite on you in prouder Coaches.
_Sis_. Is this all?

_Cou_. To spend my selfe to nothing and be laugh'd at
By all the world when I shall come at last
To this reward for all my services,
To bee your lay Court Chaplaine and say gravely
A hastie grace before your windowes breakfast.

_Sis_. But how
Came you thus cur'd? You were a passionate
(I may say) foole, in hope you will deserve it.
What phisick tooke you that hath thus restor'd you?

_Cou_. A little sack had power to cure this madness.

_Sis_. I hope you are not sober yet, the humour
May change when you ha slept.

_Cou_. Ile rather stick
My Eyelids up with Sisters[269] thread and stare
Perpetually.

_Sis_. Then you may see me agen.

_Cou_. I thinke I sha'not, unless it be to wonder,
When you are in the Ivie bush, that face
Cut upon Tafata, that creame and prunes,
So many plums in white broth, that scutcheon of
Pretence powderd with ermines. Now I looke upon't,
With those black patches it does put me in mind
Of a white soule with sinns upon't, and frights me.
How sell you grapes? Your haire[270] does curle in bunches;
You[l] lipps looke like the parsons glebe, full of
Red, blew and yellow flowers; how they are chopt
And looke like trenches made to draine the meadowe.

_Sis_. This rudenes
Is beyond the manners of a gentleman.

_Cou_. I cannot helpe it, and I hope you thinke so.

_Sis_. I am confirm'd that now I am forsaken,
But if your passion have not drownd all reason
I pray let us part civilly.

_Cou_. With all my heart; I dare then take my leave, to[o].

_Sis_. Whoe's there?

_Cou_. Where?

_Sis_. Behind that tree?

_Cou_. You have no plott to accuse me for a rape?
Twas at the worst but felony, for cherries
That look'd as they had been a fortnight gather'd.

_Sis_. I know youle bring me home in Curtesie.
_Cou_. Not I, I wo' not trust my selfe; and you 
Will hardly meet a worse to interrupt you. 
Fare you well, Ladie.--Do you see that Bull?

_Sis_. Yes, Sir.

_Cou_. That is a happie beast

_Sis_. Why happie, sir?

_Cou_. He writes no verses to his Mistresse, is 
Not cosend nor forsworne to gett her favour, 
Bestowes no rings nor empties his Exchequer 
To appear still in new rich suites, but lives 
Free o' the stock of Nature, yet loves none. 
Like the great _Turke_ he walkes in his Seraglio, 
And doth command which concubine best pleases; 
When he has done he falls to graze or sleepe, 
And makes as he had never knowne the Dun, 
White, Red or Brindled Cowe.

_Sis_. You are unmanly.

_Cou_. Nay, I know you will raile now; I shall like it. 
Call me a scurvy fellow, proud and saucie, 
An ill bred, crooked Clowne; ile here this rather 
Then live upon your pitty. And yet doe not; 
For, if you raile, too, men that know you can 
Dissemble, may beleve you love me, and 
Tis not my ayme.

_Sis_. You are a fine man!

_Cou_. I am in my best clothes?

_Sis_. I perceave 
That tis truth now what the world saies of you, 
And yet tis strange.

_Cou_. 'Twere strange it should be otherwise. 

_Sis_. You give your tongue a licence, nor will I hope 
Your malice should spare me abroad that have 
So prodigally abus'd a Ladies fame 
That deserv'd nobly from you; but you men 
Care not whose name you blast with a loose character, 
So you maintaine your pride of talke.

_Cou_. Howe's this? 
It is confess'd I have talk'd in my tyme 
And talk'd too much, but not too much of you; 
For I but seldome thought of such a woman: 
For any other--

_Sis_. Nay, sir, I am satisfied; 
You can talke your pleasure.

_Cou_. Have I not done it, too?
_Sis_. Yes, by your own report, and with a lady
So much in vertue and in birth above you;
And therefore I expect not--

_Cou_. Stay; this moves me.
I never tooke a pleasure yet to lie
With Ladies fames, or ever thought that sport
Lay in the tongue. Such humours are for men
That live by brothell offices: let me know
Who hath traduc'd me to you thus, he shall
Be knowne no more.

_Sis_. Ile not be guiltie, sir,
Of any murder; when we meet agen,
And you in better humour, I may tell you.
So farewell, _Gondarino_,[271] nothing's lost
When you turne _Woman Hater_. _Exit_.

_Cou_. She has vexed me.
If we make Matrimony after this rate,
The Divell is like to dance at our wedding. Ho!

_Enter Device_.

_De_. Hee's here,
Alone too, and the place most opportune.
How shall I beginne?--Mr. _Courtwell_, do you love
Any friend of mine?

_Cou_. Not to my knowledge, Sir; I should be sorry.

_De_. Do not you love a gentlewoman?

_Cou_. If she be a friend of yours ile take the first
Occasion to neglect her for your sake.

_De_. It will become your wisdome and your safety.

_Cou_. What mischiefe have done to your face?

_De_. My face?

_Cou_. You looke so scurvily; come hither, thou
New Monster, with more feet then a Caterpiller;
What tyme a day ist? you that move upon
So many wheeles, say, Monsier, are you not
A walkeing Clock? I have a mighty mind
To see you tooke a pieces.

_De_. I doe not like this.--
You wo'not put me, sir, together againe.

_Cou_. I wo'not take the paines. Why do you smile now?

_De_. At your conceite to thinke I was a Clock:
I am a watch, I never strike.--Hee's valiant.

_Cou_. You have pretty colours there; are these your Mistresses?
_De_. If you did know the mistery you would applaud 'em.
Have you read _Livre de blason_? What meane you?

_Cou_. I will bestow 'em, sir, upon some forehorse?
They will become a countrey teame rarely.

_De_. Mor bleu!
Why, you dare fight, it seems, and I was told
You were no Cavellier, a very dreame [droane?]
A wedg for men to breake their swords upon.
I shall never trust fame agen for your sake.

_Cou_. Thou never cosendst me.

_De_. I was never so illiterate in man.

_Cou_. For I did ever thinke thou durst not fence
But at a complement; a glittering vapour,
A thing of clothes and fitt for chambermaides
To whet their witts upon, but now resolve
Either to have your skin flead of or fight wo' me
For troubling my present meditations.

_De_. Why, sir, if you be serious I shall quit
That prejudice you have upon my valour.
Looke you, sir, I can draw, and thus provok'd
I dare chastise you, too. Cause I was merry
I was not bound to feed your spleen eternally
With laughter; yet I am not ignorant
What an advantage, sir, your weapon gives you
In length.

_Cou_. Wee'le change; why, this is honour in thee.

[They measure and Device getts both weapons_.

_De_. Now, sir, keepe of.

_Cou_. Th'art not so base?

_De_. I never cosen'd you, do you remember?
These two will guide me on the rope.

_Cou_. You meane to dance, then?

_De_. Yes, the Canaries,[272] but with quicker tyme
Then you, I hope, can follow: thus I begin.
Fa, la, la, &c. [Excurrul_.

_Cou_. What a heathen Coward's this? how the rogue tripps like a fairie
to the towne with 'em! He has been a footman, sure; I have not aire
enough to overtake him, and twill be darke presently. If I loose the
sight on him ile search the towne, and if I find him not there, pursue
him with hue and cries and after hang him.

Exit_.
SCENE 4.

_Enter Sir Francis, a taper prepar'd_.

_Fra_. The sun whose busie eye is still employ'd
A spie upon our actions, tir'd with waiting,
Is drowsie gone to bed, about whose pillow
Night hath hung all her wings and set up tapers
As if the Day were timorous like a Child
And must have lights to sleepe by. Welcome all
The houres that governe pleasure, but be slow
When you have blest me with my wishes. Time
And Love should dwell like twins; make this your bower
And charme the aire to sweetnes and to silence.
Favour me now and you shall change your states;
Time shall be old no more, I will contract
With Destiny, if he will spare his winges
To give him youth and beauty, that we may
Find every minute a fresh child of pleasure.
Love shall be proud to be no more a boy
But grow to perfect strength and bold consistence[273];
For when too Active Lovers meet, so happie
As wee, whose equall flames light to embraces,
Twill be no weight to number many yeares
In our delights and thinke all age a blessing.
But language is to narrow to expresse
What I expect, tis fitt my soule retire
Till she present her selfe; and, if it can
Measure my hop'd for ioyes with thought, prepare
To entertaine the happines.

_[Exit_.

SCENE 5.

_Sir Richard and his Lady abed. Enter Dorothy with a Light_.

_Do_. I have set already my designe a moveing
To take my Captaine _Underwit_, who in wine
Was late more feirie upon me. I'8h meane tyme
I cannot choose but laugh at the device
Wee have to cheat my Master; sure the Divell
Is a great friend to women that love men,
He doth so furnish us with quaint inventions.
Presently after supper she began
Her fitt othe toothach, and did counterfeit
So naturally; but since she went to bed
She almost rav'd by turnes:--I heare her at it.

_La_. Oh--oh, whose there?

_Do_. Tis I forsooth, I heard you groane and I
Have not the hart to sleepe. Shall I watch by you?
La. Oh, no, no, no; get you to bed, make fast the Chamber; I cannot endure the candle.

[Putts out the Candle and returns._

Ri. Deare hart be patient.

La. I, you have your homilies of patience, but if you had my paine twould make you wild. Oh!

Ri. Ile send for the _french_ toothdrawer in the morning.

La. Oh, there is no rack nor torture like it. What shall I do? I shall never sleepe agen.

Ri. Which tooth ist?

Do.--The sweet one you may be sure which troubles her.

La. This, this, O that there.

Ri. They are happie that are old and have no teeth.

La. Oh, take heed, now it shoots up to my head.

Ri. Thou dost make my head ake with the noise.

La. If you knew what I suffer your head would ake indeed. I must rise and walke in the Chamber; there is no remedy.

Ri. You will catch more cold.

La. Oh, no, no, deere life, do not crosse me; and you were in my torment you would rise and trie any thing for a little ease. It cannot be worse; the paine sure came with a cold, and who knowes but an other cold may cure me.

Ri. I prethe come to bed agen.

La. So, so, do not troble me; I am now in some little ease; its a heavenly thing to be goinge.

Ri. Dost heare?

La. Your noise will bring my paine back agen; if you knew what a vexation it were for me to speake, You wo'not put me too't so. If you doe talke I wo'not answere a word more, oh!

Ri. Well by this no light ile to _London_ tomorrow.

[She takes Dorothy by the hand and exit_.

Now do I see it is possible that a womans teeth should be as troublesome as her tongue.

Do. Oh, oh!

Ri. I cannot choose but pitty her, that any woman should hold so much paine in a hollow tooth.
_Do_.--If my Mr. touched with so much compassion should rise and force me to bed with him, I must not cry out a rape; tis at the worst on my side but fornication in my owne defence.

_Ri_. I prethe come to Bed.

_Do_. Oh, oh, oh!

_Ri_. The musick at a convocation of Catts upon a witches upsetting is the spheres to this Catterwalling. I will thrust my head into the pillow, as _Dametas_ [274] did in a bush when the beare was a comeing, and then I shanot heare her.

_Do_. Oh, this is a kind of Purgatory for sins of the flesh. If she should fall asleepe with the tother knight it is not possible I should hold out till morning; that which would fright away an Ague would put me into a feare, I shall ha the toothache indeed with counterfeiting; I have knowne some men caught the stammers so; my gums begin to murmure, there is a feare all over my flesh, she will stay so long, and then---

_Ri_. coughs_.--Uh, uh!

_Do_. Oh, oh!--Ile shift places to shew more distraction; at the worst my noise shall be within his reach; it may give her notice to returne too.

[_Exit_.

[SCENE 6.]

_Sir Francis a sleepe; a table, inke, and paper. Enter Lady_.

_La_. I am full of feares, and my owne motion frights me; This furious love is a strange pilot. Sir, Where are you? ha! asleepe! can any dulnes That is not Death possess a gentleman, So valiant in desires, when he expects To meete his Mistresse? How I blush to raise him! Was I not worth thy waking expectation? Farewell; yet something that [like?] a charme that's fastned To my poore hart restraines me. Inke and paper! Ile leave him a short monument of this shame And my neglected Love.  [_Writes_. He knowes my hand: farwell, forgetfull Lover.  [_Exit_.

_Fra_. What? have I slept? some witchcraft did betray My eyes to so much darkenes; yet my dreame Was full of rapture, such as I with all My waking sence would flie to meet. Me thought I saw a thousand Cupids slide from heaven, And landing here made this their scene of revells, Clapping their golden feathers which kept tyme While their owne feet strook musike to their dance, As they had trod and touched so many Lutes. This done, within a Cloud formd like a Throne,
She to whom love had consecrate this night,
My Mistresse, did descend and, coming toward me,
My soul that ever wakes, angry to see
My body made a prisoner and so mock’d,
Shook of the chains of sleep, least I should loose
Essentially pleasure for a dream. Tis happy;
I will not trust myself with ease and silence,
But walk and wait her coming that must bless me.
Forgive me, you bright stars, and do not frown
That I have not attended as became
One that must live by your kind influence.
Not yet appeared? She did command I should
With confidence expect her. Ha! what’s here?
This Character, was not visible before.
_That man’s too much compos’d of phleame
Will loose his Mistress for a dream_.    _Reades_.
Tis her’s, I know’t; she has been here, oh fatal!
And finding me asleep scorn’d to uncharm
My dull and cursed silence. This distracts me:
Have I so long, with so much art and study,
Labour’d this honour, and obtained what my
Ambition look’d at, her consent; and when
The tree itself bowed down its golden fruit
And tempted me to gather, must I make
My self incapable and be guilty of
So black, so base a forfeit? I could tear
My eyelids of, that durst let in a mist
So dark and so destroying, must I sleep
At such a time that the Devil must be over
Watch too! This hour hath blasted such a hope
As the Earth never teemed with nor the spring
Gave up in smiling blossoms to the breath
Of those sweet winds that whisper from the West
A tale of triumph to the year. I could
Dissolve with cursing of my Lathargie.
How shall I look upon her face whose love
And bold adventure I have thus rewarded?
But passion cannot cure my wound; which must
Bleed till I see her, and then either cease,
Blest by her pardon, or dismiss a life
(Though just) too poor a sacrifice for her anger.
Where shall I hide myself and shame for ever!

_Exit_.

_The Fifth Act_.

_Enter Sister_.

_Sis_. I cannot forget my careless gentleman: his neglect and reproaches have wrought strangely upon me.--Hee’s here.

_Enter Courtwell_.

_Cou_. Is there not a weesill crept into your Chamber, lady?
_Sis_. A weesill, sir?

_Cou_. A Mounsier sucklegge.

_Sis_. Do you take my Chamber for a henns neast?

_Cou_. There is a thing that calls himselfe _Device_,
One that will break the hart of a post horse
To continue a hand gallop with him; your Alamode,
Your fighting faery feather’d footed servant,--
When saw you him?

_Sis_. My fighting servant? has he beaten you, sir?
Perhaps he thought you were his Rivall; surely
I saw him not since yesterday.

_Cou_. Bu'y, Ladie.--
How many mile ist to the next Cutlers?
The rogue has pawn'd or sold my sword.

_[Offers to go forth_.

_Sis_. Dee heare, sir?
I can tell you now what Lady twas you did
Abuse so.

_Cou_. I abuse a Ladie! tell me the slave
Reported it. I hope twill prove this Mounsieur.
If ere we meet agen! Who wast?

_Sis_. Upon condition, sir, you will requite me
But with one gentle favour.

_Cou_. Any thing--

_Sis_. You must sitt downe and heare me then while I
At a distance thus deliver--

_Cou_. Tis more state.

_Sis_. I am most unfortunate.

_Cou_. In what, deare Damsell?

_Sis_. And much wrongd by a gentleman I lov'd.

_Cou_. Can he be a gentleman that dares
Wrong so much love and beauty? what's the offence?

_Sis_. He wo'not love agen.

_Cou_. And you would have
The stubborne man corrected?

_Sis_. I would be
Revengd if I knew how, and honour him
Should do me Justice.

_Cou_. Name the man; Ile doot.
_Sis_. I cannot.

_Cou_. How?

_Sis_. Yet turne your face: alas, it is yourselfe.
I have your word to punish him.

_Cou_. Sweet Ladie,
I am well acquainted with the worthy gentleman,
But will not kill nor strike him, for I know
He has just reason not to love you--you
Of all your sex; he told me so.

_Sis_. His reason?

_Cou_. Was in these wordes; suppose you hear him speak it;
Now do you sit--Lady, when I consider you,
The perfect frame of what we can call hansome,
With all your attributes of soule and body,
Where no addition or detraction can
By _Cupids_ nicer Crittick find a fault,
Or _Mercury_ with your eternall flame;
And then consider what a thing I am
To this high Character of you, so low,
So lost to noble merits, I despaire
To love a Mistresse cannot love agen.

_Sis_. This is a much dissembled Modesty.

_Cou_. Therefore give me the kinder Chambermaid,
That will returne me love for my two peeces
And give me back twelve pennyworth agen,
Which is as much as I can well receave;
So there is thirty and nyne shillings cleere
Gotten in Love, and much good do her too't;
I thinke it very well bestow'd.

_Sis_. But if I thinke you worthy, and accept
Your service, it destroies this other reason
For your despaire. Why, I can praise you, too.

_Cou_. No, lett it alone I have other reasons Lady
Among my papers. But to love or to be in love
Is to be guld; that's the plaine _English_ of _Cupids Latine_.
Beside, all reverence to the calling, I
Have vowd never to marry, and you know
Love may bring a Man toot at last, and therefore
My fine Gewgaw do not abuse me.

_Sis_. How can I
When you will neither Love nor marry me?

_Cou_. I was not made for a husband.

_Sis_. But I would make you.

_Cou_. I know what you would make me.
Enter Servant.

Ser. Mounsier Device, if you be alone, would present his service.

Cou. Is he come?

Sis. Sir, do me but one favour, ile recant My Love, I wonot have so much as one Good thought on you; I will neglect you, sir, Nay and abuse you, too, if you obscure But for three minutes.

Cou. Ile have patience so long.

Sis. Admitt him.--I wilbe reveng'd o' somebody.--
Now, Sir.

Enter Device.

De. I ha brought you a weapon, Lady.

La. Mee, what to do, Sir?

De. Tis Justice I present it to your feete Whose love arm[e]d me to vindicate your honour.

Sis. My honour?

De. This is but the first of my valour in your cause; If you affect these Monuments ile make You up an Armorie; meane tyme receave My Service with this sword: if he provoke me To fight with him agen, Ile cut his hand of And bring that wo' me to present the next.

Sis. Whose hand, deare servant?

De. He is not worth the nameing; las, this does not Deserve your knowledge. Only thinke what I Dare do when your bright name is question[e]d, And I in tyme may merit to be cald The darling of your virgin thoughts.

Sis. I pray stay. My name traduc'd? who was so impudent? Do me the grace to let me know on whome Your valour had been exercis'd.

De. Why, the formall thing _Courtwell_; I would [not] call him Gentleman; but that I ha baffled him You need no other witnes but his sword With that fine holliday hilt, Ladie.

_She shutts the Doore_.

Sis. Looke you, sir, I ha made fast the Doore, Because I meane before you goe to have A satisfaction for the base injury You ha done me.
_De_. I done you injurie!

_Sis_. Not that I value _Courtwell_, whome you would
Pretend has been to saucy with my honour;
But, cause I scorne to owne a goodnes should
Depend upon your sword or vindication,
Ile fight with you my selfe in this small volumne
Against your bulke in folio.

_Cou_. Excellent wench!

_De_. I was your Champion, lady.

_Sis_. Ide rather have no fame then heare thee name it.
Thou fight for a Ladies honour and disarme
A gentleman, thoul fence before the pageants
And make roome for the porters, when like Elephants
They carry once a yeare the Citty Castles,
Or goe a feasting with the Drum and foot boyes
To the _Bankeside_ and save the Beares a whipping
That day thou art cudgeld for thy saucy challenging
A sergeant with one eye, that was to much too.
Come, Sir, I meane to have a bout with you.

_De_. At that weapon?

_Sis_. This, and no other.

_De_. Ile rather bleed to death then lift a sword
In my defence, whose inconsiderate brightnes
May fright the Roses from your cheeke and leave
The Lillies to lament the rude divorce.
But were a Man to dare me, and your enemy,
My rage more nimble then [the] _Median_ shaft
Should flie into his bosome, and your eye
Change anger into smiles to see me fight
And cut him into a ragged staffe.

_Enter Courtwell_.

_Cou_. I can hold no longer. You have gott a stomack, Sir, with running;
ile try how you can eate a sword.

_De_. Ha you an ambush, Lady? Ile cry out murder.
Is two to one faire play?

_Cou_. Let me cut one legg of, to marre his running.

_De_. Hold, let me speake.

_Cou_. What canst thou say for thy baseness?

_De_. Some men loves wit, and can without dishonour
Endure a jeast. Why, do you thinke I know not
You were here, and but obscur'd to see my humour.
I came to waite upon you with your sword, I.

_Cou_. How came you by'te? confesse before this Lady.
_De_. Dost thinke her witts so limber to believe
I could compell it from thee. Twas a trick,
A meere conceipt of mirth; thou sha't ha mine.
Dost thinke I stand upon a sword? Ile gi' thee
A case of Pistolls when we come to _London_; And shoot me when I love thee not. Fox ont,
Thou apprehende'st me well enough.

_Cou_. But I am not
Satisfied: do you affect this gentlewoman?

_De_. Hum.

_Cou_. You will resolve, sir?

_De_. As may become a stranger; ile not loose
Thy friendship for all woman kind.

_Cou_. He dares not owne you.

_Sis_. I easilie forgive him; I should hate
My selfe, if I depended on his pitty.

_Cou_. Th'art a noble wench. Shall we leave of
These jigs and speake our harts in earnest? By
These twin lips I love thee extremely.

_Sis_. Sweare by your owne.

_Cou_. They shall bee mine. Mounsier,
For your penance you shall along and witnes.

_Sis_. What, I pray?

_Cou_. The Priest shall tell you; come, we have both dissembled,
We do love one another.

_Sis_. Tis not possible.

_Cou_. Unless you will deny me i'the church.
I ha vou'd to lie with you to night: _Device_,
Amble before and find the parson out;
We will bee friends and thou shalt be her father.

_De_. I must maintaine my humour or be beaten.    _Ex_.

_Cou_. Come, weele have no more acquainted.

_Sis_. Very pretty.
--I may deceave you yet for all your confidence.

_Cou_. If the skie fall weele have the larkes to supper.

[_Exeunt_.

[SCENE 2.]
Enter Ladie, Sir Francis, Dorothy.

La_. It was strange neglect, sir.

Fra_. I confesse it,
And not deserve to live for't; yet if you
But knew my sufferings--

La_. Let her be Judge.

Fra_. By no meanes, Madam.

La_. You may trust her knowledge.

Fra_. This is worse then a whipping now; these Ladies
Have no mercy on a delinquent. I must stand toot.
There is no tyrant to a chamberwoman
Made judg in such a cause; Ide give a Limbe
To be quit now, but, if she choose, I am
A Criple for this world.

Do_. Ist possible a man and such a beast?

Fra_. So, I must to the shameles.

La_. What punishment can be equall to the offence?

Do_. He lookes with some compunction for his fault.
Troth, Madam, choose an other night and trye
Whether he will sleepe agen.

Fra_. Mercifull wench!
If we peece agen it shall be a good turne in thy way.

La_. My husband is this day resolv'd for London;
It is his humour, or els, worse, suspition.
Ther's no pretence for him to stay behind.

Do_. You have made ill use of your time, Sir Francis;
I know not how to helpe you. Seaven yeare hence
You may have such an other oportunitie.

La_. Watch if my husband come not this way, Dorothy.
--Well, sir, though your transgresse deserve no pardon,
Yet I am charitable upon Condition--

Fra_. Anything, Madam. This shewes extent in you;
No penance shall displease so you absolve me.
Bid me to clime some Rock or Pyramide,
Upon whose narrow spire you have advanc'd
My peace, and I will reach it or else fall,
Lost to the world in my attempt.

La_. You speake
Gloriously; the condition that assures
Your pardon, 's only this—that you conclude
Here all your loose desires with a resolve
Never to prosecute or hope to enjoy me.

_Fra_. Call you this Charity? let me rather loose
Your pardon then for ever to be thus forfeited;
Bind me never to see you (and yet that
Were cruelty) then charme me to forgett
That I am man or have a hart, and you
A beauty, which your absence can as well
Make nothing as devide from my adoring.
It is not cure but killing to prescribe
I never must enjoy you. If you have
Resolv'd a Death upon me, let it bee
When we like Lovers have embrac'd--

_La_. It is not possible.

_Fra_. Nothing in love
Can be impossible to willing mindes.
Ile tell you, Madam--(sure the Divell has
Forsworne the flesh)--there may be a plot. I have it!
An exelent rare devise, if you but favour it.
Your husband is imediately for _London_,
I must in modesty ride with him; you
Are left behind.

_La_. How can that profitt you?

_Do_.--What a deale of submission these foolish men
Trouble us women with, that are more forward
To be friends agen then they are!

_Fra_. I will counterfeit a fall.

_La_. A fall?

_Fra_. I, from my horse; observe me, then--

_Do_.--My confederate, I hope, by this time is at gate
Enquiring for Sir _Richard_ very formally
From the old knight, his Master, and good Ladie.
The fellow has witt to manage it.

_Fra_. My footman shall pretend himselfe the Surgeon
To attend me: is't not rare?
Stand but to' th fate of this, and if it faile
I will sitt downe a Convert and renounce
All wanton hope hereafter. Deerest Madam,
If you did meane before this honour to me,
Let not your loving thoughts freeze in a Minuit.
My genius is a prophet.

_Do_. Sir _Richard_, Madam,
Is comeing this way.

_Fra_. Shall I hope agen?

_La_. I wo'not say you shall despaire.

_Fra_. You blesse me.  _Exit_.

Exiting.
_Do_. My busines is a foote; your Jewell, Madam,
Will credit much the cause.

_La_. Wee will withdraw
And let me know how you have cast the plott.

[Exeunt._

(SCENE 3.)

_Enter Sir Richard, opening a Letter; a Footman waiting._

_Ri_. From thy Master? his name?

_Foo_. Sir _Walter Littleland_.

_Ri_. I doe not know him.

_Foo_. His name is well knowne in _Lincolnshire_ neere the fenns: there
were his family antient gentlemen before the Conquest; some say ever
since the flood.

_Ri_. _Littleland_!

_Foo_. But he has now more land then three of the best in the shire,
thanke the _Duchmen_ that have drunk up all the water.

_Ri_. They water drinkers?

_Foo_. Why not, as well as eate dry land? they are lin'd with butter,
Sir, and feare no Dropsie.

_Sir Richard reades_.

_She has been absent theis two yeares; the occasion, her dislike and
disaffection to a gentleman whome I confesse I did too severely urge
her to marry. If she have liv'd with you, as my late intelligence hath
enformed me, in the nature of a servant, which is beneath my wishes and
her condition, I hope upon this knowledge you will with consideration of
her quality (she being the onely Child and heire to my fortune) use her
like a gentlewoman. And though my yeares have made me unfitt for
travell, I do intend, upon returne of your Letters, personally to give
you thankes for your respects to my Daughter, whome I shall receave as
new blessing from you, and be happie upon any turne presented to
expresse my selfe for your favours, your true friend and servant_
_W. Littleland._

My maide _Dorothy_ a Knights Daughter and heire! Doe you know your yong
Mistresse.

_Foo_. I shall be happie to see her and present her with a Letter & some
token from her Ladie Mother.

_Ri_. I pray trust me to deliver it.
_Foo_. With all my hart, Sir, you may comand.

___Enter Thomas___.

_Ri_. _Thomas_, pray entertaine this footman in the butterie; let him
drink and refresh himselfe, and set the cold chine of Beefe before him:
he has ranne hard.

_Tho_. That will stay his stomach, indeed, but Claret is your only
binder.

_Foo_. Sack, while you live, after a heat, Sir.

_Tho_. Please you, my friend, ile shew you the way to be drunke.

___Exit. [Tho. with footman___.

_Ri_. To my loving Daughter. May not this be a trick?
By your favour, Madam. ___He opens the Letter___.

___Enter Underwit___.

Captaine, gather you the sence of that Letter while I peruse this. You
know Mistress _Dorothy_.

_Un_. I have had a great desire to know her, I confess, but she is
still like the bottome of the map, _terra incognita_. I have been a
long tyme hovering about the _Magellan_ streights, but have made no
new discoveries.

_Ri_. Hal! this is not counterfeit, I dare trust my owne Judgment; tis a
very rich one. I am confirmed, and will scale them up agen. My Ladies
woman Sir _Walter Litteland_ Daughter and heire! What think you now of
Mistris _Dorothy_?

_Un_. A great deale better than I did; and yet I have lov'd her this
halfe yeare in a kind of way. O' my conscience why may not I marry her?

_Ri_. This Jewell was sent by her mother to her.

_Un_. Deere Uncle conseale till I have talk'd with her. Oh for some
witchcraft to make all sure.

_Ri_. I like this well; shees here.

___Enter Dorothy___.

_Un_. I vow, Mistris Dorothy, if I were immodest twas the meere impudence
of my sack and not my owne disposition; but if you please to accept my
love now, by the way of Marriage, I will make you satisfaction like a
gentleman in the point of honour.

_Do_. Your birth and estate is to high and unequall for me, sir.

_Un_. What care I for a portion or a face! She that has good eyes has
good----Give me vertue.

_Do_. You are pleas'd to make your mirth of me.
_Un_. By this Rubie, nay you shall weare it in the broad eye of the world, dost thinke I am in Jeast.

_Do_. Sir _Richard_--

_Un_. And were he ten Sir _Richards_., I am out of my wardship.

_Do_.--How he flutters in the lime bush! it takes rarely.

_Un_. What a necessary thing now were a household Chaplaine.

[Ext. [Dorothy & Underwit_.

_Ri_. So, so, the wench inclines. I will hasten my journey that I may appear with more excuse when they are married in my absence.

_Enter Captaine and Engine_.

_Cap_. Sir, I heare you are for _London_ presentlie; It will concerne you take this gentleman Along w'ee to bee cur'd.

_Ri_. Mr. _Engine_ sick!

_Cap_. Oh, sir, Dangerously; he has purg'd his stomack, but the ill spiritts Are flowne into his head and spoild his eares. He was ever troubled with Devices in his head; I stronglie feare he must have his scull open'd, His brains are very foule within. I know And can direct you to an excle'nt Surgeon.

_En_. I cannot heare you, Captaine--

_Cap_. One that has a rare dexteritie at lanceing Or opening of a stomack that has crudities; So neat at separation of a limbe And quartering of treason.

_Ri_. You meane the hangman?

_Cap_. He has practised late to mend his hand, and now With the very wind and flourish of his instrument He will strike flatt a projector at twelve score.

_Ri_. Does he not heare you?

_Cap_. He has lost that sence he saies, unless he counterfeits; It wilbe your securitie to see him Safe in the Surgeons hands.

_they whisper_.

_En_.--Into what misery have my Projects flung me! They shanot know I understand 'em. That I were quitt with loss of both my eares, although I cut my haire like a Lay Elder, too, To shew the naked conyholes! I doe thinke What cursed Balletts will be made upon me And sung to divilish tunes at faire and Marketts
To call in cutpurses. In a puppet play,
Were but my storie written by some scholler,
Twould put downe _hocas pocsas_ and the tumblers
And draw more audience than the Motion
Of _Ninivie_ [275] or the dainty docile horse[276]
That snorts at _Spaine_ by an instinct of Nature.

_Cap_. Ile leave him to you and seeke out Captaine _Underwit_.

[_Exit_.

_Ri_. Come, Master _Engine_, weele to horse imediately.

[_Exeunt_.

[SCENE 4.]

_Enter Courtwell, Sister and Device_.

_Cou_. So, we are fast enough, and now I have thee
Ile tell thee all the fault I find; thou hast
A little too much witt to bee a wife;
It could not be too nimble for a Mistresse.--
_Device_, there is a part still of your pennance
Behind. You would pretend to be a Poet;
Ile not disgrace the name to call thee one,
But let me have rimes against we go to bed,
Two Anagrams that weigh an ounce, with coment,
And after that in verse your Affidavit
That you do wish us joy, and I discharge you.

_De_. Tis tyme I were at study then.

_Cou_. About e'm:
Your double congey and depart with silence. [_Exit Device_.
Now prethe tell me who reported I
Had wrong'd a Ladie? Wast not thy revenge
To make me angrie?

_Sis_. Twas, indeed. Now tell me:
Why at the first approach seem'd you so modest?
You have confidence to spare now.

_Cou_. Troth I came not
With any wooing purpose; only to please
My Uncle, and try thy witt; and that converted me.

_Enter Thomas_.

_Tho_. Did you see my Master, Captaine _Underwit_?

_Cou_. Yes, hee's talking with the priest and Mistris _Dorothy_.

_Tho_. Her fathers footman was here; she is a knights daughter
And heire, but she does not know it yet.

_Sis_. I thinke so.
_Cou_. Where's my Uncle.

_Tho_. A mile ons way to _London_ by this tyme with Sir _Richard_. I long to see my Master.  [Exit_.

_Cou_. Wee shall want companie to dance.

_Enter Ladie_.

_Sis_. My Sister.

_Cou_. If you please, Madam, you may call me Brother: We have been at 'I _John_ take the _Elizabeth_'.
A possett and foure naked thighes a bed
To night will bid faire earnest for a boy, too.

_Sis_. Tis even so; Madam, the preist has done it.

_La_. May then all joyes attend you; if this had Been knowne, it might have staid Sir _Richard_ and Your Uncle one day more.

_Enter Underwit, Dorothy, Captaine, Thomas_.

_Un_. Come for another Couple.

_Tho_. In hell[277]; my Master is married.

_La_. My husband left some letters and a token Was sent you Mistris _Dorothy_. You did ill To obscure your selfe so much; you shall not want Hereafter all respects that may become you.

_Do_. Madam, I know not what you meane.

_Cap_. She wonot take it upon her yet.

_Un_. Theres the sport.

_Enter Device_.

_De_. Oh, Madam, newes, ill newes, an accident Will blast all your mirth: Sir _Francis_--

_Cou: La_. What of him?

_De_. Has brooke--

_Cou_. His neck?

_De_. You guest very neere it, but his shoulder Has sav'd that joynt. A fall from's horse, they say, Hath much endanger'd him.

_Cou_. My Uncle hurt!  [Exit_.

_La_. He has kept his word; now if he but counterfeit handsomely.
Mounsier Device, I must entreat a Courtesie; you have wit, and I would have a Masque to entertaine my new father-in-law Sir Walter Littleland. Mistres Dorothy, now my wife, is his onely Daughter and heire.

Who has guld you thus? I am no knights Daughter; You may share your poeticall invention, sir.

Give you joy, Captaine.

She is still loth to confesse it.

Enter Sir Francis, Lady, Courtwell, Sister, Captaine.

If you have charity a bone setter.

He does counterfeit rarely.--Wheres Sir Richard?

He rid before, but I sent my footman to tell him this misfortune. Oh, Madam!

This is better then the toothack; he carries it excellently.

Aske me no torturing questions; I desire, Madam, a little conference with you. Ile thanke the rest if they withdraw: oh!

Letts leave him.

Wee'le to my chamber, captaine.

You have a mind to examine the business privatly?

No, good Captaine, you may be present.

Come, Thomas, thou shat be witnes, too.

Let's leave them.

They are gone; they feigne most artificially, Let me embrace you.

Oh, take heed.

What's the matter?

Tis no dissembling.--Madam; I have had A fall indeed, a dreadfull fall; I feele it. I thinke my horse saw the Divell in some hedge: Ere I had rid three furlongs, gave a start, Pitcht me of ons back like a barr and broke A flint with my shoulder, I thinke, which stroke fire too; There was something like it in my eyes, Ime punish'd.

But is this serious? are you hurt indeed?

Hurt? I ha broke my shoulder feelingly, And I am of opinion when I doe Enjoy you, Madam, I shall breake my neck;
That will be next. I'll take this for a warning
And will leave of in tyme.

_La_. This makes me tremble.

_Fra_. I will be honest now; and so forgive me.

Not the Surgeon come yet?

_La_. Heaven hath cur'd us both.

_Fra_. I am not cured yet. Oh for the bone setter! If ere I counterfeit agen.

_La_. There is a blessing falne upon my blood.

Your only charme had power to make my thoughts

Wicked, and your conversion disenchant's me;

May both our lives be such as heaven may not

Grieve to have shew'd this bounty.

_Enter Courtwell_.

_Cou_. Sir _Richard_, Madam.

_La_. You may enter now, sir.

_Enter the rest and Sir Richard_.

_Ri_. I do not like this stratageme; Sir _Francis_

Must not here practise his Court tricks; I wo'not

Enter Surgeon_.

Trust my wives surgerie. Hee's come.--How ist,

Noble Sir _Francis_? Best withdraw; I'll see

Him drest my selfe. _[They lead out Sir Francis]_.

_Enter Underwit, Dorothy, Captaine, Thomas_.

_Un_. Madam and gentlemen, Mistris _Dorothy_ wo'not acknowledge she is

a knight's daughter; she sweares she knows no _Littleland_.

_Do_. Till it appeare to whom this gemme was meant,

Deare Madam, be you treasurer. I confesse

I have wealth enough in such a noble husband.

_La_. It shall belong to thee; be honest, _Dorothy_,

And use him well.

_Do_. With my best study, Madam.

_La_. Where is the footman you talke of?

_Tho_. He pretended Letters to carry two mile of to a kinsman of his

Masters, and returne presently. He dranke three or fower beere glasses

of sack, and he ran away so lightlie.

_Do_. His reward shall overtake him.

_Un_. Will you have her? she will doe you service, Captaine, in a _Low

Country_[279] Leaguer. Or thou, _Thomas_? I'll give thee a Coppiehold.
_Tho_. You have one life to come in that lease, yet I thank you; I am free, and that's inheritance; for ought I know she may serve us both.

_La_. Come you may perswade her to looke high and take it upon her for your credit. The gullery is yet within these walles; let your shame goe no farther. The wench may prove right, she may.

_Enter Sir Richard_.

_La_. What news from Sir _Francis_?

_Ri_. Wife, I hardly aske thee forgivenes; I had jealous thoughts, but all's right agen.

_La_. I will deserve your confidence.

_Ri_. No great danger, his blade bone dislocated; the man has put everything in his right place.

_Un_. Dee heare, Sir _Richard_? wee are married.

_Ri_. Tis well done, send you joy; tis to my mind.

_Un_. Come hither, _Dorothy_.

_Cap_. But where's Mr. _Engine_?

_Ri_. He rid before.

_Cap_. If the rascall have any wit left he will ride quite away with himselfe; tis his best course to fly oversea.

_Tho_. If he were sure to flie, he were sure to escape.

_Cap_. At the worst, drowning is a most [sic] honourable death then hanging.

_Do_. My mother died, I have it by tradition, As soone as I was borne; my father (but No knight) is now i'th _Indies_, a poore Merchant, That broke for 20,000 pounds.

_Ri_. The shippes may come home. Hee!

_Do_. You were best use me well, now we are married. I will be sworne you forc'd me to the Church And thrice compeld me there to say _I Dorothy_. The Parsons oath and mine, for ought I know, May make it halfe a rape.

_Ri_. There is no remedy; We can prove no conspiracie. And, because I have been gulld my selfe, gett her with child, --My Doe is barren,--at birth of her first baby Ile give her a hundred peeces.

_Un_. That's somewhat yet, when charge comes on. Thy hand! a wife can be but a wife: it shall cost me 500 pounds but ile make thee a Ladie in earnest.
_Enter Sir Francis and Surgeon_.

_Ri_. How ist, Sir _Francis_?

_Fra_. My Surgeon sayes no danger; when you please, I may venture, Sir, to _London_.

_Ri_. No hast now.

_Cou_. Not to-night, Sir; wee must have revells and you salute my Bride.

_Un_. And mine.

_Tho_. A knights Daughter and heire.

_Fra_. May all joy thrive upon your Loves.

--Then you are cosend of your Mistres, Mounseir?

_Do_. But your nephew knowes I have met with my match. Some bodie has been put to the sword.

_Ri_. Come, we loose tyme.

_Fra_. Preserve your marriage faith: a full increase Of what you wish confirme your happinesse.
name nor initials.

First in order, leaves 1-29, stands Fletcher's _Elder Brother_. I have compared the MS. with Dyce's text, and find the variations to be few and unimportant. In III. 3 Dyce follows the old copies in reading:--

> What a noise is in this house! my head is broken  
> Within a parenthesis: in every corner,  
> As if the earth were shaken with some strange colic,  
> There are stirs and motions.

As the words "within a parenthesis" were found in all the old copies, Dyce did not feel justified in rejecting them, although he had only the most grotesque meaning to assign to them. Theobald rightly saw that "within a parenthesis" was a marginal note, mistaken for a part of the text when the book was sent to press. The MS. gives--

> Sweet heart,  
> What noyse is in this house? my head is broken  
> In every corner, as the earth were shaken  
> With some strange Collick: there are stirs and motions:  
> What planet rules this house? Whos there?

In III. 5 the MS. supports Mason's correction "Their blue veins _and_ blush disclose," where Dyce followed the old reading " _in_ blush." -- At the end of the play, after the Epilogue, are written the three following Epigrams:--

> A freemans life is like a pilgrimage:  
> What's his life then that lives in mariage?  
> Tis _Sisyphus_ his toyle that with a stone  
> Doth doe what surely for ease must be done.  
> His labours journey's endles; 'tis no riddle,  
> Since he's but halfe on's way that stands inth' middle.

> _Ad Janum_.

> Take comfort. _Janus_; never feare thy head  
> Which to the quick belongs, not to the dead.  
> Thy wife did lye with one; thou, being dead drunke,  
> Then art no Cuckold though she bee a Punke.

> Tis not the state nor soveraintie of _Jove_  
> Could draw thy pure affections from my love:  
> Nor is there any _Venus_ in the skyes  
> Could from thy lookes withdraw my greedy eyes.

Leaves 30-51 are taken up with _Dick of Devonshire_. Then follows an unnamed play (leaves 52-73), written in a villainous hand. If I succeed in transcribing this play I shall print it in the third volume, for it seems to be an unpublished play of Heywood's. The next piece, entitled _Calisto_ (leaves 74-95), which is written in the same hand, consists of scenes from Heywood's _Golden Age_ and _Silver Age_. There are many variations from the printed copies, showing that the most active of the old playwrights found time to revise his works. Here is a song that was omitted in the printed copy. Its proper place in Pearson's _Reprint_ of Heywood is vol. iii. p. 67:--

> Whether they be awake or sleepe,
With what greate Care ought Virgins keepe,
   With what art and indevor,
The Jewell which they ought to pryse
Above the ritchest marchandise,--
   And once lost lost for ever!

Virginty is a rare gem,
Rated above a diadem,
   And was despised never:
'Tis that at which the most men ayme
And being gott they count their game
   And once lost lost for ever.

Of the charming song "Haile beauteous Diana, Queene of Shades" the MS. gives a far inferior version:--

Thou Trivia, dost alone excell,
In heaven when thou dost please to dwell
Cald Cynthia, Proserpine in Hell:
   But when thou theair art fyred
And takest thy bugle and thy bowe,
To chase on Earth the hart or doe,
Thee for Diana all men knowe,
   Who art mongst us admired:
Pan and Pomona boath rejoyce,
So swaynes and nimphes with pipe and voyce.

Off all chast vestalls thou art queene
Which are, which heretofore have been;
The fawnes and satyres cladd in greene
   On earth wayte to attend thee;
And when that thou on huntinge goest,
In which thou art delighted moest,
They off their active swiftnes boast,
   For which we all comend thee.
Pan and Pomona boath rejoyce,
So swaynes and nimphes with pipe and voyce.

We come now to a chronicle play (leaves 97-118), Edmond Ironside: The English King. This piece had a second title--A trew Chronicle History called War hath made all friends. It must be confessed that this old play is a tedious business, sadly wanting in life and movement. The following extract will give a taste of the author's quality:--

Enter Canutus, Edricus with other Lords and souldiers.

Canutus. A plague upon you all for arrant cowards!
Looke how a dunghill cocke not rightly bred
Doth come into the pitt with greater grace,
Brislinge his feathers, settinge upp his plumes,
Clappinge his winges and crowinge lowder out
Then doth a cocke of game that meanes to fight;
Yett after, when he feeles the spurres to pricke,
Crakes like a Craven and bewrayes himself:
Even soe my bigbond Daines, adrest to fight
As though they meant to scale the Cope of heaven,
(And like the Giants graple with the gods)
At first encounter rush uppon theire foes
But straight retire: retire? nay, run awaye
As men distraught with lightninge from above
Or dastards feared with a sodaine fraye.

_Edricus_. Renowned Soveraigne, doe not fret your self.
Fortune in turninge will exalt your state
And change the Countenaunce of her cloudy browe,
Now you must hope for better still and better
And _Edmond_ must expect still worse and worse,
A lowringe morning proves a fayer daye,
Fortunes ilfavord frowne shewes shee will smile
On you and frowne on _Ironsde_.

_Canutus_. What telst thou mee of fortune and her frownes,
Of her sower visage and her rowling stone?
Thy tongue rowles headlong into flattery.
Now by theis heavens above our wretched heads
Ye are but cowards every one of you!
_Edmond_ is blest: oh, had I but his men,
I would not doute to conquer all the world
In shorter time the [then] _Alexander_ did.
But all my _Daines_ are Braggadochios
And I accurst to bee the generall
Of such a stocke of fearefull runawaies.

_South_. Remember you have lost Ten Thousand men,
All _English_ borne except a Thousand _Daines_.
Your pensive lookes will kill them that survive
If thus to Choller you give libertie.

_Canutus_. It weare no matter if they all weare slaine,
Then they should neaver runne awaye againe.

_Uska_. My noble lord, our Cuntrymen are safe:
In all their broyles _English_ gainst _English_ fight;
The _Daines_ or none or very few are slaine.

_Canutus_. It was a signe yee fledd and did not fight.

Then cheere ye upp, my lord, and cheere upp us,
For now our valours are extinguished
And all our force lyes drownd in brinish teares,
As Jewells in the bottome of the sea.
--I doe beseech your grace to heare mee speake.

[Edricus talks to him.]

The next piece (leaves 119-135), which is without a title, is founded on the Charlemagne romances. My friend, Mr. S.L. Lee, editor of _Huon of Bordeaux_, in answer to my inquiries writes as follows: "Almost all the characters in this play are the traditional heroes of the French Charlemagne romances, and stand in the same relation to one another as in the _Lyf of Charles the Grete_ and the _Four Sons of Aymon_, both of which were first printed by Caxton, and secured through later editions a wide popularity in England during the XVIIth century. I believe, however, that the story of the magic ring is drawn from another source. It is unknown to the Charlemagne romances of France and England, but it appears in several German legends of the Emperor, and is said to be still a living tradition at Aix-la-Chapelle, where the episode is usually localised (cf. Gaston, Paris, _Histoire Poetique de Charlemagne_, p. 383). Petrarch has given a succinct account of it in a letter written from Cologne, in which he states that he learnt it from the priests of the city, and it is through his narrative that the legend appears to have reached England. John Skelton in his poem 'Why come ye not to court?' quotes the story, and refers to the Italian poet as his authority (cf. Dyce's Skelton, II. 48 and 364, where the letter is printed at length). Southey has also made the tradition the subject of a ballad entitled _King Charlemain_ to which he has prefixed a French translation of the passage of Petrarch. In 1589 George Peele in a _Farewell_ addressed to Morris and Drake on setting out with the English forces for Spain tells them to

Bid theatres and proud tragedians,
Bid Mahomet, Scipio, & mighty Tamburlaine,
King _Charlemagne_, Tom Stukeley and the rest
Adieu.

Dyce, in a note on this passage (Dyce's Peele, II. 88) writes: 'No drama called _Charlemagne_ has come down to us, nor am I acquainted with any old play in which that monarch figures.' But we know from Henslowe's diary that in at least two plays that were dramatised from Charlemagne romances the Emperor must have taken a part." Mr. Lee concludes his most interesting note by suggesting that the present play may be the one to which Peele alludes; but he will at once perceive from my extracts that the date 1589 is much too early. Here is a passage that might have been written by Cyril Tourneur:--

[_Ganelon_ stabs _Richard_, his dearest friend,
suspecting him of treachery.]

_Rich_. O you've slayne me! tell me, cruell sir,
Why you have doone thys, that myne innocent soule
May teache repentance to you-- _dies_.

_Gan_. Speake it out,--
What, not a worde? dumbe with a littill blowe?
You are growne statlye, are you? tys even so:
You have the trycke of mightie men in courte
To speake at leasure and pretend imployment.
Well, take your tyme; tys not materyall
Whether you speake the resydue behynde
Now or at doomes day. If thy common sence
Be not yet parted from thee, understand
I doe not misse thee dyinge because once
I loved thee dearlye; and collect by that
There is no Devyll in me nor in hell
That could have flest me to this violent deathe
Hadst thou beene false to all the world but me.

The concentrated bitterness of those lines is surpassed by nothing in the _Revenger's Tragedy_. Indeed, I am inclined to believe that the whole play, which is very unskilfully constructed, is by Tourneur, or perhaps by the author[281] of the _Second Maiden's Tragedy_. All the figures are shrouded in a blank starless gloom; to read the play is to watch the riot of devils. Here is an extract from the scene where _Orlando_, returning from the wars, hears that _Charlemagne_, his uncle, has married _Ganelon's_ niece, and that his own hopes of succession have been ruined by the birth of a son:--

_Orl[ando._]_ I am the verye foote-ball of the starres,
Th'anottomye of fortune whom she dyssects
With all the poysons & sharpe corrosyvves
Styliid in the lymbecke of damde pollycie.
My starres, my starres!
O that my breath could plucke theym from theire spheares
So with theire ruyns to conclude my feares.

_Enter La Buffe._

_Rei[naldo._]_ Smoother your passions, Sir: here comes his sonne--
A propertie oth court, that least his owne
Ill manners should be noted thyeks it fytt
In pollycie to scoffe at other mens.
He will taxe all degrees & thynke that that
Keepes hym secure from all taxation.

_Orl._ Y'are deceyvd; it is a noble gentyllman
And hated of hys father for hys vertues.

_Buf._ Healthe and all blessinge wherewith heauen and earthe
May comforte man, wayte on your excellence!

_Orl._ Although I know no mans good wyshe or prayrs
Can ere be heard to my desyred good,
I am not so voyde of humanytie
But I will thancke your loue.

_Rei._ Pray, Sir, what newse
Hath the courte latterly beene deliverd of?

_Buf._ Such as the gallymaufry that is fownd
In her large wombe may promise: he that has
The fayrest vertues weares the foulest shyrte
And knowes no shytfe for't: none but journeymen preists
Invay agaynst pluralitye of liueinge
And they grow hoarse ithe cause, yet are without
The remedye of sugar candye for't.
Offices are like huntinge breakfasts gott
Hurlye burlye, snatcht with like greedynes,
I & allmost disjested too assoone.
_Oli[ver]_. I, but in sober sadnes whatts doone there?

_Buf_. Faythe, very littill, Sir, in sober sadnes,  
For there disorder hurryes perfect thyngs  
To mere confussyon; nothing there hath forme  
But that which spoyles all forme, & to be shorte  
Vice only thrives & merrytt starves in courte.

_Rei_. What of the maryadge of your noble aunte  
Oure fayre eied royall empresse?

_Buf_. Trothe I wonderd, Sir,  
You spooke of that no sooner, yet I hope  
None here are jealyous that I brought one sparke  
To kyndell that ill flame.

_Orl_. No, of my trothe,  
I knowe thee much too honest; but how fares  
The Empresse now, my dear exequetresse?

_Buf_. Sir, as a woman in her casse may doe;  
Shee's broughte [to] bedd.

_Rei_. What, has she a chylde then?

_Buf_. I, my Lord.

_Orl_. A Sonne?

_Buf_. Mys-fortune hathe inspyrd you, Sir; tys true.

_Orl_. Nay when my fortune faylls me at a pynche  
I will thinke blasphemy a deede of merrytt.  
--O harte, will nothing breake the?

_Rei_. Tis most straunge.

_Orl_. Straunge? not a whytt. Why, if she had beene spayd  
And all mankynd made Euenucks, yet in spyght  
My ill fate would have gotten her with chylde--  
Of a son too. Hencefourthe let no man  
That hathe a projecte he dothe wishe to thryve  
Ere let me knowe it. My mere knowledge in't  
Would tourne the hope't successe to an event  
That would fryghte nature, & make patyence braule  
With the most pleasinge obiecte.

_Buf_. Sir, be at peace;  
Much may be found by observatyon.

_Orl_. Th'arte bothe unfriendlie & uncharytable.  
Thys observation thou advysest to  
Would ryvett so my thoughts upon my fate  
That I should be distrackt. I can observe  
Naughte but varyetye of mysseries  
Crosssyng my byrthe, my blood and best endeavours.  
I neare did good for any but great _Charles_,  
And the meare doing that hath still brought fourth  
To me some plague too heavye to be borne,
But that I am reserud onlye to teach
The studyed envye of mallignant starrs.
If fortune be blynde, as the poetts houlde,
It is with studyinge myne afflictions:
But, for her standing on a roullinge stone,
Theare learninge faylls theym, for she fixed stands
And onlye against me.

I may perhaps be tempted to print this play in full. The MS. has
suffered somewhat, many lines having been cut away at the foot of some
of the pages. Although the first scene is marked _Act 2, Scene 2_,[282]
the play seemed to me to be complete. On the last leaf is written "Nella
[Greek: phdrphr] la B." Some name is possibly concealed under these
enigmatic letters; but the riddle would defy an Oedipus.

The next play (leaves 136-160) is entitled _The fatal Maryage, or a
second Lucreatya_. _Galeas_, on returning from the wars, crowned with
praises, is requested by his widowed mother to make a journey into the
province of _Parma_ to receive moneys owed by Signor _Jouanny_. On his
arrival he falls in love with _Jouanny's_ daughter, _Lucretia_, runs
away with her, and secretly marries her. _Galeas'_ mother, angered at
the match, practises to convey _Lucretia_ to a nunnery and get her son
married to an earl's daughter; but _Galeas_ defeats his mother's
machinations by killing himself and _Lucretia_. There is a second plot
to this odd play, but enough has been said. The meeting between _Galeas_
and _Jouanny_ is the best thing in the play:--

_Enter Galeas & Jacomo_.

_Ga_. You spake with him as I comanded you?

_Jac_. And had his promise to meet you presently.

_Ga_. I have heard much fame of him since my arrive,
His generall nature, hospitable love;
His [He's?] good to all men, enemy to none.
Indeed he has that perfect character
Before I see him I'm in love with him.

_Jac_. Hee has the fame few Cittizens deserve.

_Ga_. Why, sir, few Cittizens?

_Jac_. His words his bond, and does not break that bond
To bankrupt others; he makes you not a library
Of large monopoly to cosen all men:
_subintelligitur_, he hates to deale
With such portentious othes as furr his mouth
In the deliverance.

_Enter Jouanny_.

_Ga_. Hee comes himselfe.

_Jou_. Sir _Galeas_, if I mistake not?

_Ga_. I weare my fathers name, sir.

_Jou_. And tis a dignity to weare that name.
Whatts your affairs in _Parma_?

_Ga_. To visit you, sir.

_Jou_. Gladness nor sorrow never paid mans debts. 
---Your pleasure, sir?

_Ga_. The livery of my griefe: my fathers dead
And mee hath made his poore executor.

_Jou_. What? ought hee ten thousand duckets?
Thy fathers face fixt in thy front
Should be the paymaster tho from my hand.

_Ga_. I doe not come to borrow: please yee read.

_Jou_. Read? and with good regard, for sorrow paies noe debts.

_Ga_. The summes soe great I feare, once read by him,
My seeming frend will prove my enemy.

_Jac_. Faith, if he doe, hee proves like your French
galloshes that promise faire to the feet, yet twice a day
leave a man in the durt.

_Jou_. Was this your fathers pleasure?

_Ga_. It was his hand.

_Jou_. It was his writing, I know it as my owne,
Wherein hee has wronged mee beyond measure?


_Jou_. Wert thou his father I'm wrongd,--
Injur'd, calumniated, baffled to my teeth;
And were it not that these gray haires of mine
Were priviledgd ane enemy to valour,
I have a heart could see your fathers wrong--

_Ga_. What? raile you, sir?

_Jac_. Challenge a half pint pot.

_Jou_. There in a sawpitt, knave, to quitt my self
Of such an injury.--Hee writes mee here
That I should pay to you tenn thousand crownes.

_Ga_. As being due to him.

_Jou_. But thatts not my quarrell, sir; for I did owe to him
Millions of Crownes, millions of my love;--
And but to send a note here for his owne!
Ist not a quarrell for an honest man?

_Jac_. With very few, I thinke.

_Jou_. Why, looke yee, sir:
When after many a storme and dreadfull blow
Strooke from fire-belching clouds, bankrupt of life
I have home return'd; when all my frends denide
Their thresholds to mee, and my creditors
Desir'd to sinke mee in a prisoners grave,
Hee gave mee dying life, his helpefull hand
Sent mee to sea and kept mee safe on land.
Ist not a quarrell then to seeke butts owne?

_Ga_. Oh, pray, sir--

_Jou_. When all the talents of oppression
Of usurers, lawyers and my creditors
Had fangd upon my wife and family,
Hee gave mee dying life, his helpfull hand
Sent mee to sea and kept mee safe on land.
Ist not a quarrell then to seeke but's owne?

_Ga_. Good sir--

_Jou_. Come in, sir, where I will pay all that you can demand:
Noe other quarrell, sir, shall passe your hand.

_Ga_. If every [one] should pay as well as you
The world were good, wee should have bankrupts few.

_Jac_. I'm of your mind for that.    _Exeunt_.

We now come to a play (leaves 161-185), without title, and wanting some leaves at the end, on the subject of Richard the Second. I think with Mr. Halliwell-Phillipps, who printed eleven copies of this piece, that it is anterior to Shakespeare's play. There is less extravagance of language than in most of the plays belonging to that early date (circ. 1593?); and the blank verse, though it is monotonous enough, has perhaps rather more variety than we should expect to find. Much of the play is taken up with _Greene_ and _Baggott_; but the playwright has chiefly exerted himself in representing the murder of _Woodstock_ at Calais. Before the murder, _Woodstock_ falls asleep, and there appears to him the ghost of the _Black Prince_:

... Oh I am nought but ayre:
Had I the vigour of my former strength
When thou beheldst me fight at _Cressy_ feild,
Wher hand to hand I tooke King _John_ of _France_
And his bould sons my captive prisoners,
Ide shake these stiff supporters of thy bed
And dragg thee from this dull securyty.
Oh yett for pittye wake; prevent thy doome;
Thy blood upon my sonne will surely come:
For which, deere brother _Woodstocke_, haste and fly,
Prevent his ruein and thy tragedy.    _Exit Ghoste_.

Undisturbed by this appeal, _Woodstock_ slumbers on. Then enters the ghost of _Edward the Third_. His speech is worthy of Robert Greene:--

Sleepst thou so soundly and pale death so nye?
_Thomas_ of _Woodstocke_, wake my sone and fly.
Thy wrongs have roused thy royall fathers ghost,
And from his quiat grave king _Edwards_ come
To guard thy innocent life, my princely sonne.
Behould me heere, sometymes faire _Englands_ lord:
(7) warlicke sonnes I left, yett being gone
No one succeeded in my kingly throne, &c.

I will not inflict more of this stuff on the reader. Suffice it to say that _Woodstock_ wakes in terror and calls aloud. _Lapoole_, the governor of the city, who is close at hand with two murderers, enters and comforts him. Here the playwright shows a touch of pathos:--

Good nyght, _Lapoole_, and pardon me, I prethee,
That my sadd feare made question of thy faith.
My state is fearefull and my mynd was troubled
Even at thy entrance with most fearefull vissions
Which made my passiones more extreame and hastye.
Out of my better judgment I repent itt
And will reward thy love: once more, good nyght.

Now follows the _Lady Mother_ (leaves 186-211), which I have proved to be a play of Glapthorne's. No doubt it is the same piece as the _Noble Trial_, entered on the Stationers' Registers, June 29, 1660, but not printed.

Then we have a masque (leaves 212-223). On the first page are given the _nomina actorum_, and underneath is written "August 5th, 1643." I was surprised to find in this masque a long passage that occurs also in Chapman's _Byron's Tragedie_ (ed. Pearson, ii. 262). Ben Jonson said (to Drummond of Hawthornden) that only he and Chapman knew how to write a masque. The remark has always puzzled me, and certainly I should never have thought of Chapman's name in connexion with this masque. Here is an extract, containing the passage from _Byron's Tragedie_:--

_**Love**_. For thy sake, Will, I feathered all my thoughts
And in a bird's shape flew in to her bosome,
The bosome of _Desert_, thy beautious Mistris,
As if I had been driven by the hauke
In that sweet sanctuary to save my liffe.
She smild on me, cald me her pretie bird,
And for her sport she tyed my little legs
In her faire haire. Proud of my golden fetters
I chirped for Joy; she confident of my lameness,
Soon disintangled me & then she percht me
Upon her naked breast. There being ravishd
I sung with all my cheere and best of skill.
She answered note for note, relish for relish,
And ran division with such art and ease
That she exceeded me.

_**Judgment**_. There was rare musicke.

_**Love**_. In this swete strife, forgetting where I stood.
I trod so hard in straining of my voice
That with my claw I rent her tender skin;
Which as she felt and saw vermillion follow
Stayning the cullor of _Adonis_ bleeding
In _Venus_ lap, with indignation
She cast me from her.

_**Will**_. That fortune be to all that injure her.
Love. Then I put on this shepheards shape you see;
I tooke my bow and quiver as in revenge
Against the birds, shooting and following them
From tre to tre. She passing by beheld
And liked the sport. I offered her my prey,
Which she recev'd and asked to feele my bowe;
Which when she handled and beheld the beauty
Of my bright arrowes, she began to beg em.
I answered they were all my riches, yet
I was content to hazard all and stake em
Downe to a kiss at a game at chess with her.
"Wanton," quoth she, being privy to her skill,
"A match!" Then she with that dexterity
Answered my challenge that I lost my weapons:
Now Cupides shafts are headed with her lookes.
My mother soone perceiving my disgrace,
My Arms beinge lost and gon which made me a terror
To all the world, she tooke away my wings,
Renounced me for her child and cast me from her;
And more, to be revenged upon Desert,
Comanded Danger to be her strong keeper,
That should she empt my quiver at the hearts
Of men they might not dare to court her, fearing
That horrid mischiefe that attends [on] her.
On this I threw me headlong on the sea
To sleepe my tyme out in the bottome off it;
Whence you have puld me up to be a scorne
To all the World.

Will. Not so, my pretie boy, Ill arme the againe;
My breast shall be thy quiver, my sighes thy shafts:
And here an opportunyte to be wingd againe;
See here the wings of Fortune.

Love. Fortunes wings
Are full of giddy feathers to unsure
For me to fly with all, but I will stay with you,
I like so well this aire; onely you must
Provide to keepe me from the hands of Danger
That wayts upon Desert.

Will. Our selves and all
Arcadia shall be your guard and wher
Love passes and recides he shall be allways
Armed and attended by a band of lovers,
Such faithfull ones as if that ugly Danger
Were Lucifer himselfe, they should defend you.

Next on our List (leaves 224-244) is the Two Noble Ladyes, or the Converted Conjurer. This "Tragicomicall Historie often tymes acted with approbation at the Red Bull in St. John's Streeete by the company of the Revells," is a coarse noisy play. The comic part consists of the most absurd buffoonery, and the rest is very stilted. But there is one scene--and one only--which shows genuine poetic power. It is where Cyprian, the sorcerer, having by his magical arts saved Justina, a Christian maiden, tries to gain her love:--

Enter Cyprian and Justina.
_Cyprian_. Doe not disdayne, faire peece of Natures pride, 
To heare him plead for love that sav'd thy life. 
It was my pow'rfull arte produc'd those monsters 
To drowne those monstrous executioners 
That should have wrought your wracke.

_Justina_. Sir, I am sorry 
Hell had a hand in my delivery: 
That action cannot merrit my affection.

_Cyprian_. I not alleadge it for desert of grace 
But argument of mercie: pitty him 
That in distresse so lately pitty'd you.

_Justina_. I am the troth-plight wife of _Clitophon_, 
The Prince of _Babylon_; hee has my hart, 
And theres no share for others.

_Cyprian_. That high state 
Is now at a low ebbe: destruction 
Hangs like a threatning Commet ore the walls 
Of _Babilon_. Then fix thy love on him 
That can more then the greatest prince on earth. 
Love mee, and princes shall thy pages bee; 
Monarchs shall lay their crownes and royalties 
As presents at thy feet; the _Indian_ mynes 
Shall be thy ioyntures; all the worldes rich marchants 
Shall bring their pearles and pretious stones to thee, 
Sweet gums and spices of _Arabia_, 
Fine _Median_ linnen and Barbarian silkes; 
The earth shall beare no fruit of raritie 
But thou shalt taste it. Weele transforme ourselves 
In quaintest shapes to vary our delights. 
And in a chariot wrought out of a cloud, 
Studded with starres, drawne through the subtle aire 
By birds of paradise, wee'll ride together 
To fruitfull _Thessalie_, where in fair _Tempe_ 
(The only pleasant place of all the earth) 
Wee'll sport us under a pavilion 
Of _Tyrian_ scarlet.

_Justina_. Should these rarities 
(Faithlesse as are your wondrous promises) 
Lead me into the hazard of my soule 
And losse of such ay-lasting happinesse 
As all earths glories are but shaddows to?

_Cyprian_. Thincke you this rare pile of perfection. 
Wherein Love reads a lecture of delight, 
Ows not it's use to Nature? There is love 
In every thing that lives: the very sunne 
Does burne in love while we partake his heate; 
The clyming ivy with her loving twines 
Clips the strong oake. No skill of surgerie 
Can heale the wounds, nor oceans quench the flames 
Made by all pow'rfull love. Witnesse myselfe: 
Since first the booke of your perfections 
Was brought so neare than I might read it ore, 
I have read in it charmes to countermand
All my enchantments and enforce mee stoop
To begge your love.

_Justina_. How ere you please to style
A lustfull appetite, it takes not mee.
Heav'n has my bow my life shall never bee
Elder then my unstain'd virginitie.

_Cyprian_. Virginitie! prize you so dearely that
Which common things cast of? Marke but the flow'rs
That now as morning fresh, fragrant and faire,
Lay ope their beautys to the courting sunne,
And amongst all the modest mayden rose:
These wanton with the aire until unleav'd
They die and so loose their virginitie.

_Justina_. In _India_ there is a flow'r (they say)
Which, if a man come neare it, turns away:
By that I learne this lesson, to descrie
Corrupt temptations and the tempter flie.

Leaves 245-267 are taken up with the _Tragedy of Nero_, which was printed in 1624. Then comes [Daborne's] _Poore Man's Comfort_ (268-292), an inferior play printed in 1655. Afterwards follows a dull play (leaves 293-316), _Loves Changlelings Changed_, founded on Sidney's _Arcadia_. The last piece in the book (leaves 317-349) is _The lancheinge of the May_, Written by W.M. Gent in his return from _East India_, A.D. 1632. There is a second title, _The Seamans honest wife_, to this extraordinary piece. On the last leaf is a note by Sir Henry Herbert:--"This Play called ye _Seamans honest wife_, all ye Oaths left out in ye action as they are crost in ye booke & all other Reformations strictly observed, may bee acted, not otherwise. This 27th June, 1633.      HENRY HERBERT.

"I command your Bookeeper to present mee with a faire Copy hereafter and to leave out all oaths, prophaness & publick Ribaldry as he will answer it at his perill.      H. HERBERT."

It is plain therefore that the piece was intended for presentation on the stage; but it must have been a strange audience that could have listened to it. Dramatic interest there is none whatever. The piece is nothing more, than a laudation of the East India Company. In tables of statistics we have set before us the amount of merchandise brought from the East; and the writer dwells with enthusiasm on the liberality of the Company, and shows how new channels have been opened for industry. One extract will be enough:--

Nor doe our marchants tradinge into Spayne,
The _Strights_, to _Venice_, _Lisbon_ or the like,
Give entertainment unto novices
Which have not some experience of the sea.
But when all doors of Charitie are shutt
The _East India_ gates stand open, open wide,
To entertaine the needle & the poore
With good accommodation. Two moneths paye
They have before hand for to make provision,
Nedfull provision for so longe a voyage,
And two moneths paye theyr wives are yearely payd
The better to mayntayne theyr poore estate
Duringe the discontinuance of theyr husbands.
Yf in the voyage he doe chance to [MS. doe] dye
The widowe doth receave whatere's found due,
Yf not by will disposed otherwise;
Which often happeneth to be such a sume
As they togeather never sawe the like.
And when did any of these widowes begge
For mayntenaunce in Churches as some doe?
__Blackwall_ proclaymes theyr bountie; __Lymehouse_ speakes
(Yf not ingrate) their liberalitie;
__Ratcliffe_ cannot complayne nor __Wapping_ weepe,
Nor __Shadwell_ crye agaynst theyr niggardnes.
No, they doe rather speake the contrary
With acclamations to the highest heavens.

APPENDIX II.

The following note is by Mr. Robert Boyle, of St. Peters burg, a
Shakespearian scholar, whose name is well known to readers of the
__Anglia_ and the __New Shakspere Society's Transactions__. Mr. Boyle, who
has a close acquaintance with Massinger, on seeing the proof-sheets of
__Sir John Van Olden Barnavelt__, pointed out several repetitions of
expressions used in other plays of Massinger. It will be understood that
I do not adopt Mr. Boyle's conclusions unreservedly. Possibly in an
Appendix to Vol. IV. I may return to a consideration of __Barnavelt__, but
the present volume has already swollen beyond its limits.

__Sir John Van Olden Barnavelt__.

This play, the most valuable Christmas present English scholars have for
half a century received, appears indubitably to belong to the Massinger
and Fletcher series. Even a cursory glance will convince the reader that
it is one of the greatest treasures of our dramatic literature. That
such a gem should lie in manuscript for over 200 years, should be
catalogued in our first library, should be accessible to the eye of the
prising scholar, and yet never even be noticed till now, affords a
disagreeable but convincing proof of the want of interest in our early
literature displayed even by those whose studies in this field would
seem to point them out for the work of rescuing these literary treasures
from a fate as bad as that which befell those plays which perished at
the hands of Warburton's "accursed menial." The present play has some
remarkable features in it. It is taken from contemporary history (the
only one as far as we know of that class in which Massinger was
engaged). It was written almost immediately after the events it
describes. These events took place in the country in which Englishmen
then took more interest than in any other country in Europe. There is a
tone of political passion in the play which, particularly in one place,
breaks out in an expression which the hearers must have applied to their
own country. There is no doubt that the audience wandered away in their
thoughts from Sir John Van Olden Barnavelt, the saviour of his country
from the Spanish yoke, as he professed himself in his defence on his
trial, and Spain's determined enemy, to Sir Walter Raleigh, whose head
had just fallen on the block, the victim of a perfidious foe and of a
mean, shuffling king. The following is the passage:--

Octavius, when he did affect the Empire,
And strove to tread upon the neck of Rome
And all her ancient freedoms, took that course
That now is practised on you; for the Catos,
And all free spirits slain or else proscribed,
That durst have stirred against him, he then seized
The Absolute rule of all. _You can apply this_. p. 292.

In a note Mr. Bullen informs us, that "You can apply this" is crossed through. He does not state whether there is anything to show that this was done by Sir George Buck, Master of the Revels, and consequently Censor for the Stage. But this would appear to be the case, the more so as the present play seems to have raised scruples in many places in the mind of the dramatic Cerberus. It is hardly possible to imagine that the spectators did not apply the "free spirits" to Raleigh, and the "Catos" to those members who were shortly after to be imprisoned on account of a memorable protest entered in the journals of the House, which Octavius, who was trying to seize the absolute rule of all, tore out with his own royal hands. There is a peculiar fitness in this hit at James as Octavius which probably did not escape the audience. There is another passage, on p. 253, which, singular to say, seems to have escaped the notice of the Censor:--

Such mild proceedings in a Government
New settled, whose main power had its dependence
Upon the power of some particular men,
Might be given way to, but in ours it were
Unsafe and scandalous.

Vandort, the speaker here, is opposing the idea of mercy to Barnavelt. The language is very mild, but receives a peculiar shade of meaning when read in connexion with the following passage by Massinger from the _Virgin Martyr_, I. 1, 236:--

In all growing empires
Even cruelty is useful; some must suffer
And be set up examples to strike terror
In others, though far off: but when a state
Is raised to her perfection, and her bases
Too firm to shrink, or yield, we may use mercy
And do't with safety.

The _Virgin Martyr_ is noticed October 6th, 1620, as newly reformed. It was probably written not long before. The two passages above mentioned would seem to bring the two plays into connexion. But, it may be asked, what proof have we that it was a production of Massinger and Fletcher? As for the latter, there can be no doubt. His double endings are sufficient proof. As for the Massinger part, there is first the probability of his being Fletcher's partner, as the play belongs to a period when we know they were working together; secondly, the metrical style could belong to nobody else; thirdly, according to his well-known manner, he has allusions to and repetitions of expressions in his other plays. As I have gone through Massinger with a view to these repetitions, I propose to notice those that occur in the present play. When I allude to a play going under the name of Beaumont and Fletcher as partly Massinger's, I am supported either by Mr. Fleay's tables, published in the _Transactions of the New Shakspere Society_, or to my own extension of these tables published in the _Eng. Studien_, a German
periodical for English literature and philology.

Act I. The First Scene is by Massinger, who almost always begins the joint plays. On page 210 we have--

When I should pass with glory to my rest.

Compare _Virgin Martyr_, V. 2. 319.

When thou shouldst pass with honour to thy rest.

On page 211,

And end that race
You have so long run strongly, like a child,

is a repetition of the idea in _Virgin Martyr_. On page 212 "Grave Maurice"; here "Grave" is Count Maurice, who is also so called in _Love's Cure_, I. 2. Bobadilla's speech. (_Love's Cure_ is by Massinger and another author, not Fletcher.)

Page 213.

The desire of glory
Was the last frailty wise men ere put off.

This occurs again in _A Very Woman_, V. 4, line 10,--

Though the desire of fame be the last weakness
Wise men put off.

Though the thought occurs in Tacitus and Simplicius, Milton seems to have adopted it, as he has done many other of his most striking passages from Massinger. It occurs also in at least one other play of Massinger's, but the passage has escaped me for the moment.

Same page:--

'Tis like yourself,
Like Barnavelt, and in that all is spoken.

An expression which, with a slight change from "spoken" to "comprehended," occurs in almost every one of Massinger's plays.

Act I. Scene 2, is also by Massinger. On page 218,--

We need not add this wind by our observance
To sails too full already.

This reminds us of the common Massinger simile,--

Too large a sail for your small bark.

And _Virg. Mar_., I. 1. 85,--

You pour oil
On fire that burns already at the height.

Both similes occur in almost all Massinger's plays.
The situation on page 219 has a striking resemblance to a similar scene with Cranmer in _Henry VIII_. Both Maurice and Cranmer are to be disgraced by being kept waiting outside while their enemies were at Council. I cannot help here repeating what I have expressed before, that _Henry VIII_, as we have it is not the work of Shakespeare and Fletcher, but of Massinger and Fletcher, with only fragments of the Shakespeare play.

Act I. Scene 3, is by Fletcher.

Act II. Scene 1, is by Massinger.

On page 231 we have,--

When the hot lyon's breath
Burns up the fields.

Compare _Parliament of Love_, I. 5., Montrose,--

When the hot lion's breath singeth the fields.

A little lower down, "At all parts" occurs in almost every play of Massinger.

On page 232, "This I foresaw," is also very common in similar situations. Among numerous cases I refer to the _Unnatural Combat_, Act III., about the end, and _Maid of Honour_, II. iii., where exactly the same words are used.

Page 233, "Be ne'er remembered," occurs in almost all Massinger's plays. It is the most frequent of his many repetitions.

A little lower down. "And something there I'll do," is a well-known Massingerism, occurring everywhere in his plays.

II. 2, is by Fletcher; 3, and 4, 5, 6, 7 are also probably his.

III. 1, is Fletcher's. On page 250 Barnavelt's hope that the soldiers will regret him because he fed and nursed them, stands in flagrant opposition to what Massinger says of Barnavelt's cashiering the Captain, on page 215.

III. 2, is by Massinger.

Page 252, "But that is not the hazard that I would shun," is one of the commonest Massingerisms. The passage on page 253 has been mentioned already. Massinger is almost the only later dramatist who has a large number of dissyllable "tions." We have here (253),--

Of what condi_ti_on soever, we
Palliate seditions.

His share of the present play presents many such cases.

III. 3, seems also by Massinger.

III. 4, is by Fletcher. On page 263 there is an unmistakable reminiscence of _Henry VIII_, Wolsey's "Farewell."
III. 5 (also marked 4), is by Massinger. On page 264 occurs, "At no part," one of the commonest Massingerisms; and a little lower down,—

    Ever maintained
    The freedom I was born to.

Compare _Great Duke of Florence_, I. 1-4,—

    For I must use the freedom I was born with.

It also occurs in other Massinger plays.

III. 6, is by Fletcher.

IV. 1, is by Fletcher.

IV. 2, is by Fletcher.

IV. 3, is by Fletcher. Here occurs another allusion to _Henry VIII_.,—

    And glide away
    Like a spent exhalation.

Compare _Henry VIII_., III. 2, 226:—

    shall fall
    Like a bright exhalation in the evening.

Fletcher does not repeat himself often, and these two exceptions are important.

IV. 4, is apparently by Massinger, but contains no repetitions.

IV. 5, is by Massinger. There are no clear Massingerisms, but the metrical style, and the allusion to Raleigh already mentioned, make it plain that the Scene is his.

V. 1, is also Massinger’s. The end of this Scene I have not seen, as pages 296-305 were missing in the proof-sheets I examined. Nearly all Scene 2 is also missing. It and the rest of the play seem to be Fletcher’s, who, as usual, spoiled Massinger’s fine conception of Barnavelt, and makes him whine like Buckingham in _Henry VIII_. This moral collapse of all energy in the face of death in the two characters is significant. Massinger would have carried out the scene in quite another tone. Some of the Fletcher scenes in this play, in which he has an unusually large share, are surprisingly good, and remind us of Fletcher at his best, in _Philaster_ and the earlier plays. He fails here, as he always does, in the delineation of character. Nowhere is this break-down more characteristic than in Buckingham and Barnavelt. It gives the end of our play quite a wrench, and deprives Barnavelt of the sympathies which we had been forced to turn on him through his intrepid behaviour in the great trial scene. We had almost gained the conviction that his aims were really pure, and here we are called on to witness his utter collapse, in which he almost whines for pardon for his sins, and, like all worthless fellows without character seems actually to soften in gratitude to the man who sent him to his death.

This conclusion, I say, weakens the dramatic power of the close, but it
does not prevent Sir John Barnavelt from occupying a high place among our dramatic treasures. R. BOYLE.

ST. PETERSBURG,
New Year’s Eve, 1882.

FINIS.

FOOTNOTES:


[2] Reprinted in Mrs. Bray’s _Tamar and the Tavy_.


[4] Mr. Fleay thinks that _Dick of Devonshire_ was written by R. Davenport. “The conduct of the plot,” he observes, “the characterisation, the metre, the language are very like the _City Nightcap_.” The reader must judge between us. I find it difficult to believe that Davenport could have preserved throughout five acts such clear directness of style.


[8] Span. picaro, a rogue or thief. Nares quotes several instances of “picaro” and “picaroon” from our early writers.

[9] It would be an improvement to read “enkindled,” or “kindled at the first.”

[10] Cf. Heywood’s _Faire Maid of the West_: part one (Works, II. 306), “And joyne with you a ginge of lusty ladds.” The meaning is “band, company.” The word is not uncommon among Elizabethan writers, and is also found much earlier.


[12] Halliwell quotes Minsheu: “The Spanish _borachoe_, or bottle commonly of a pigges skinne, with the haire inward, dressed inwardly with rozen and pitch to keepe wine or liquor sweet.” Hence the word came to be applied to a drunkard.

[14] The repetition of the words "such a" is probably a clerical error: the Alexandrine is clumsy.

[15] Skirmishers or sharpshooters.

[16] Nares quotes from Taylor's _Workes_, 1630:--"So horseman-ship hath the trot, the amble, the _racke_, the pace, the false and wild gallop, or the full speed," &c.

[17] Street bullies, such as are introduced in Nabbes' _Bride_, Middleton and W. Rowley's _Fair Quarrel_, &c. The exploits of a "Roaring Girl" are admirably set forth by Dekker and Middleton.

[18] The full form "God refuse me" occurs in Webster's _White Devil_ (ed. 1871, p. 7), where Dyce quotes from Taylor, the water poet: "Would so many else in their desperate madnes desire God to Damne them, to Renounce them, to Forsake them, to Confound them, to Sinke them, to _Refuse_ them?" "_Against Cursing and Swearing_," _Works_, 1630.

[19] "The Saturday Night, some sixteen sail of the Hollanders, and about ten White Hall Men (who in England are called Colliers) were commanded to fight against the Castle of Punthal, standing three miles from Cadiz: who did so accordingly; and discharged in that service, at the least, 1,600 shot." _Three to One_, &c. (Arber's _English Garner_, I. 626).


"The Infinity of Love
Hold no proportion with Arithmetick."

[22] To "look babies in the eyes" was a common expression for peering amorously into the eyes.

[23] Sc. fagot.

[24] "Barleybreake" (the innocent sport so gracefully described in the first book of the _Arcadia_) is often used in a wanton sense.

[25] A common form of expression. Everybody remembers Puck's--

"I'll put a girdle round about the earth
In forty minutes."

Cf. Chapman's _Bussy D'Ambois_, I. 1.--

"In tall ships, richly built and ribd with brasse,
To put a Girdle round about the world."

[26] Furnished with "bosses," which seem to have been the name for some tinkling metal ornaments. Nares quotes from Sp. _Moth. Hub_. I. 582:--

"The mule all deck'd in goodly rich array,
With bells and bosses that full loudly rung."

[27] Cf. _Spanish Tragedy_, sc. vi.:--
"A man hanging and _tottering_ and _tottering_,
As you know the wind will wave a man."

(Quoted by Mr. Fleay in illustration of the "tottering colours" in _King John_, v. 5, 7.)

[28] One is reminded of Shakespeare's--

"Had I _as many sons as I have hairs_,
I would not wish them to a fairer death."--_Macbeth_, v. 8.

[29] "That e'er o'erclouded," I should prefer.

[30] MS. _Exit_.

[31] Eringoes are often mentioned as a provocative by early writers: _Merry Wives_, v. 5, &c.


[33] Sc. I lying in my _trundle-bed_.

[34] To "make ready" is to dress; so to "make unready" is to undress. The expression was very common.

[35] A large salt-cellar was placed in the middle of the table: guests of importance sat "above the salt," inferior guests below. Abundant illustrations are given in Nares' Glossary.

[36] In Brand's _Popular Antiquities_ (Bohn's _Antiq. Libr_, II. 70-77) there is an interesting article on "Groaning Cake and Cheese."

[37] A large coach: the derivation of the word is uncertain.

[38] The next word is illegible in the MS. We should have expected _"Exeunt Fer., Man., & attendants_."


[40] The schoolmen's term for the confines of hell.

[41] I have followed the punctuation of the MS., though I am tempted to read, "What to doe? pray with me?"

[42] A stage-direction for the next scene.

[43] Sc. bravadoes.

[44] The biting of the thumb is here a mark of vexation: to bite one's thumb _at_ a person was considered an insult (_Rom. and Jul_, i. 1).

[45] A diminutive of "cock" (_Tempest_, ii. 1, &c.).

[46] The conceit is very common. Compare (one of many instances) Dekker's _Match me in London_, iv. 1--

"You oft call Parliaments, and there enact
Lawes good and wholesome, such as who so breake
Are hung by the purse or necke, but as the weake
And smaller flyes i'th Spiders web are tane
When great ones teare the web, and free remain."

[47] The reading of the MS. is "snapsance," which is clearly wrong. "Snaphance was the name for the spring-lock of a musket, and then for the musket itself. It is said that the term was derived from the Dutch _snap-haans_ (poultry stealers), a set of marauders who made use of it" (_Lilly's Dramatic Works_, ed. Fairholt, II., 272). "Tarrier" must mean "a person that causes delay": cf. a passage from Sir Thomas Overbury's character of "a meene Petty fogger":--"He cannot erre before judgment, and then you see it, only _writs of error_ are the _tarriers_ that keepe his client undoing somewhat the longer" (quoted in Todd's _Johnson_, sub _tarrier_).

[48] "One being condemned to be shot to death for a rape: the maid [sic] in favour of his life was content to beg him for her husband. Which being condiscended unto by the Judge, _according to the lawe of Spaine in that behalfe_: in steps me the hangman all in a chafe and said unto the Judge. Howe (I pray you, sir) can that be, seeing the stake is already in the ground, the rope, the arrowes, the Archers all in a readiness, and heere I am come for him." (Anthony Copley's _Wits, Fits, and Fancies_, 1614, p. 120.) Here is another merry tale, with rather more point in it, from the same collection:--"A fellow being to suffer, a maide came to the gallowes to beg him for her husband, according as the custome of _Spaine_ dispenceth in that case. The people seeing this said unto the fellow: Now praise God that he hath thus mercifullie preserv'd thee, and see thou ever make of this kinde woman that so friendly saves thy life. With that the Fellow viewing her and seeing a great skarre in her face, which did greatlie disfigure her, a long nose, thin lips and of a sowre complexion, hee said unto the Hangman: On (my good friend) doe thy duty: Ile none of her." (p. 160.)

[49] Cf. _Rom. and Jul_., I., iii., 76, "Why, he's a man of wax," where Dr. Ingleby (who has no doubt learnt better by this time) once took the meaning to be, "a man of puberty, a proper man." Steevens happily compared Horace's "_cerea_ Telephi brachia."

[50] The old spelling for "bawbles."

[51] "Slug. A ship which sails badly." Halliwell. I cannot recall another instance of the use of the word in this sense.

[52] The "trundle-bed" (or "truckle-bed") was a low bed moving on castors. In the day-time it was placed under the principal or "high" bed: at night it was drawn out to the foot of the larger bed. Vid. Nares, sub "truckle bed" and "trundle bed."

[53] The reading of the MS. is unintelligible. For _All_ I would read _Alq_. and for "Law you?"--by a very slight change--"Love you?" (the question being addressed to Henrico). Then what follows is intelligible.

[54] "Flay" is usually, if not always, written "flea" in old authors.

[55] MS. "For 3 hellish sins:"

[56] The passage might be tortured into verse, somewhat as follows:--

"Nay but
Shall I not be acquainted with your designe?
When we must marry,
Faith, to save charges of two wedding dinners,
Lets cast so that one day may yield us bridegroome,—
I to the daughter, thou to the mother."

[57] We ought, no doubt, to read "professed,"--a trisyllable.

[58] An allusion is intended to the tailor's "hell,"--the hole under the counter.


[60] MS. tracning.

[61] In the MS. the stage direction has been altered to "Enter Sir Gefferie & Bunche." The whole of the colloquy between Sucket and Crackby is marked as if to be omitted. Doubtless this was one of the "reformacons" made at the instance of the Master of the Revels.

[62] Such would seem to be the reading of the MS., but it is not quite plain. I suspect that the true reading is "tripe-wives" (cf. oysterwives, &c.).

[63] I.e., Besar las manos (hand-kissing).

[64] MS. "will."

[65] Perhaps we should rather read:--

"Fie, Sister;
'Tis a pretty gent[leman], I know you love him."

[66] The words "I faith" have been crossed out in the MS.--as being irreverent.

[67] MS. "whom."

[68] Cf. _The Ladies Privilege_, i. 1. (Glapthorne's Works, ii. 99)--

"For my services
Pay me with pricelesse treasure of a kisse,
While from the balmy fountaynes of thy lips
Distils a moisture precious as the Dew
The amorous bounty of the morne
Casts on the Roses cheeke."

[69] In the MS. the word "witnes" has been crossed out and "vouchers" substituted.

[70] The introductory part of this scene, up to the entrance of the steward, had been omitted by the copyist and is added on the last leaf of the play.

[71] In the margin we find the words "Well said, Mr. Steward: a good observation."

[72] "Pride" has been crossed out in the MS.
"What? does he plucke it out of his Codpeece? Yes, here lyes all his affeccon."--Marginal note in MS.

"A verrie politique drunkard"--"I think the barrell of Hedlebergs in his bellye."--Marginal notes in MS.

"Tis well his friends here to reconcile ....... for assault and battery elce."--the other words in the marginal note are illegible.

"It were but cast away on such a beast as thou art." Marginal note.

To "take in" is a common phrase for "to take by storm."

Pappenheim fell at the battle of _Luetzen_, November 16, 1632; but there had been fighting at _Maestricht_ in the earlier part of the year.

MS. pdue.

The first reading was--"Hold, hold, good Captaine, tis our most temperate Steward."

'Heere, here' is a correction (in the MS.) for 'what then?'

MS. Trime.

These words are crossed out in the MS.

Therefore this play would seem to have been acted at the Whitefriars, i.e. at the Salisbury Court theatre. (F.G. Fleay.)

The "jig" seems to have been a comic after-piece consisting of music and dancing. In Mr. Collier's _Hist. of Dram. Lit._, iii. 180-85 (new ed.), the reader will find much curious information on the point. The following passage from Shirley's _Love in a Maze_ (1632) is not noticed by Mr. Collier:--

"Many gentlemen
Are not, as in the days of understanding,
Now satisfied without a jig, which since
They cannot, with their honour, call for after
The Play, they look to be serv'd up in the middle:
Your dance is the best language of some comedies
And footing runs away with all; a scene
Express'd with life of art and squared to nature
Is dull and phlegmatic poetry."

--Works (ed. Gifford and Dyce), ii. 339.

MS. him.

The name of the musician, I suppose; but the reading of the MS. is somewhat illegible.

The passage at first ran as follows: "Umh, how long have I slept, or am I buried and walke in Elizium as the poets faine? Goe to, where are they? in the ayre? I can perceive nothing nor remember anything has been don or said!"

' _Grimes_. Soe, now retire a little. Ile play him one fitt of
mirthe on my trebble to rouse him. _Ext_. These words occur in the left-hand margin. Probably they should stand here in the text. 'Ext.' may mean either '_exeunt_' (musicians) or '_exit_' (_Grimes_ to disguise himself).

[90] 'Who are these! ha! the towne waits? why, how now, my masters, what's the matter, ha?'--Passage cancelled in MS.

[91] 'Bakside' is a correction (in the MS.) for 'buttock.'

[92] "Here Gentlemen, share this amongst yee and pray for Grimes." These words (addressed to the musicians) follow in the MS. but have been scored through.

[93] The MS. gives "aurescion."

[94] The reading of the MS. seems to be "inuolute." Mr. Fleay suggests "invocate."

[95] The repetition of 'loath' in the next line is suspicious.

[96] The arrangement of the verse is not easy; perhaps we should read--

'Wishes for husband.
    A proper Gent[leman]; I'm happy
    She has made so iuditious an election.'

Our author usually makes a trisyllable of "gentleman"; here it counts only as a monosyllable.

[97] Between this word and the next there is a mark of omission in the MS., and the words "t'were Sir" have been written above.

[98] What follows, to the entrance of _Thurston_, is marked to be omitted. I have thought fit to restore it to the text. "Here's Mr. _Thurston," concludes Clariana's speech.

[99] Cf. a similar passage in Glapthorne's _Wit in a Constable_ (Works, I. 182):--

"a limber fellow,
    Fit onely for deare _Nan_, his schoole-fellow,
    A Grocer's daughter borne in _Bread-street_, with
    Whom he has used to goe to _Pimblico_
    And spend ten groats in cakes and Christian ale."

From Shirley we learn that the apprentices took their pleasure in the mild form of treating their sweethearts to cream and prunes:--

"You have some festivals, I confess, but when
    They happen, you run wild to the next village,
    Conspire a knot and club your groats apiece
    For cream and prunes, not daring to be drunk."

(_Honoria and Mammon_, v. i.).

Pimlico seems to have been a place near Hoxton famous for its ales and custards; cf. Mayne's _City Match_, II. 6.--
"Nay, captain, we have brought you
A gentleman of valour, who has been
In Moorfields often: marry it has been
To squire his sisters and demolish custards
At Pimlico."

There is an unique tract entitled "Pimlyco or Runne Red cap, 'tis a mad world at Hoggesden," 1609.

[100] I cannot find that "bob" is used as a technical term in falconry. Mr. Fleay suggests that a "bob'd hawke" merely means a "hawk cheated of her prey." I rather think the meaning is a "hawk beaten or repulsed by her prey."

[101] From "A Kalendar of the English Church," p. 45 (Rivingtons: n.d., but 1865), one learns that "Marriage is restrained by Law at the following times unless with a License or Dispensation from the Bishop of the Diocese, his Chancellor, or Commissary, viz., from Advent Sunday until eight days after the Epiphany; from Septuagesima until eight days after Easter; and from the Monday in Rogation week until Trinity Sunday."

[102] I venture to insert the word "poet": both sense and metre are defective without it.

[103] In the MS. "thee" is corrected into "you."

[104] Some words have been cut away.

[105] MS. throng.

[106] "_Thu_. And here she comes, I feare me"--crossed out in the MS.

[107] Here a line follows in the MS:--

"And verely she is much to blame in it."

It is crossed through, and rightly.

[108] "Puny" is not uncommonly spelt "puisne" (Fr. puisne) in old authors.


[110] MS. have.

[111] MS. puisants.

[112] The "Artillery Garden" was situated in Finsbury Fields, where also was the place of exercise for the City Trained Bands. In the "Antiquarian Repertory" (ed. 1807), i. 251-270, the reader will find an interesting account of the Trained Bands and the Artillery Company. Old writers are fond of sneering at the City warriors. The following passage is from Shirley's "Witty Fair One," v. 1:--"There's a spruce captain newly crept out of a gentleman-usher and shuffled into a buff jerkin with gold lace, that never saw service beyond Finsbury or the Artillery-Garden, marches wearing a desperate feather in his lady's beaver, while a poor soldier, bred up in the school of war all his life, yet never commenced any degree of commander, wants a piece of brass to
discharge a wheaten bullet to his belly."

[113] "Vinum muscatum quod moschi odorem referat, propter dulcedinem_,
for the sweetnesse and smell it resembles muske," &c_. Minsheu's _Guide
into Tongues_ (apud Dyce's _Glossary_).

[114] "Mooncalf" (originally the name for an imperfectly formed foetus)
was used as a term of reproach, like dodypol, nincompoop, ninny,
dunderhead, &c.

[115] _Sc_. trifling fellow, noodle.

[116] The blades from Bilboa in Spain were esteem'd as highly as those
of Toledo manufacture.

[117] MS. two.

[118] "Striker" is a cant term for a losel, a wencher.

[119] "Mew" is a falconer's term for the place where a hawk is confined.

[120] This passage is repeated in _The Ladies Privilege_, at the end of
Act I.

[121] "Curst" is an epithet applied to shrewish women and vicious
beasts.

[122] This is the prettiest passage, I think, to be found in Glapthorne.

[123] MS. me.

[124] "Oh me" is crossed out, and "once" written above.

[125] The passage is bracketed in the MS., and was probably meant to be
omitted.


[127] Throughout the scene "judge" is substituted in the MS. for
"recorder."

[128] MS. know.

[129] This passage is bracketed in the MS. It could hardly have been
expected to escape official censure.

[130] MS. led.

[131] Bracketed in MS.

[132] Early Greek writers held up the Scythians as models of justice and
simplicity (Iliad, xiii. 6, &c.). Clearchus (apud Athen., xii. 27)
accuses them of cruelty, voluptuous living, and viciousness of every
kind; but, in justice to the Scythians, it should be added that in his
"animadversiones" to the "Deipnosophists" (when will somebody complete
and print Dyce's translation?) the learned Schweighaeuser in no measured
language accuses Clearchus of wanton recklessness and gross inaccuracy.

[133] "What is the matter there? looke to the prisoners," was the first
The passage is bracketed in the MS.

Erased in MS.

Before correction the passage stood "And now, madam, being your servant and _Timothy_ I bring you newes!" The words "Stay, stay Mr. Justice," &c., were inserted afterwards.

Bracketed in MS.

The reading of the MS. appears to be "a lonly."

Bracketed in MS.

The MS. is a folio of thirty-one leaves, written in a small clear hand: it was purchased for the National Library in 1851 from the Earl of Denbigh.

In May, 1622, "by reason of sickness and indisposition of body wherewith it had pleased God to visit him, he had become incapable of fulfilling the duties and was compelled to resign."--Vid. Collier's "Hist. Eng. Dram. Lit." I. 402 (new ed.).

Mr. Warner, of the Manuscript Department of the British Museum, to whom we owe the excellent Catalogue of the Dulwich Collection, kindly drew my attention to the autograph letter.

In the right-hand margin we find "Jo: R: migh."--the names of the actors who took the Captains' parts. Further on the name "Jo: Rice" occurs in full. John Rice stands last on the list of Chief Actors in the first fol. Shakespeare. The reader will find an account of him in Collier's "Hist. of Eng. Dram. Lit.," iii. 486-88. It is curious that he should have taken so unimportant a part; but perhaps he sustained one of the chief characters besides.--"Migh" = Michael.

It seems to have been no uncommon thing for officers to keep the names of soldiers on the list after their death and pocket their pay: cf. Webster's "Appius and Virginia," v. i., &c.

The reply of 1 _Cap_.; extending to thirteen lines, has been scored through in the MS., at the instance, I suppose, of the censorious Master of the Revels; it is, unfortunately, quite illegible.

The MS. reads "_Enter Barnavelt, Modes-bargen, Leidenberck_, Vandermetten, _Grotius_, Taurinus, Utenbogart, _Hogebeets_." Names not in italics are scored through.

MS. Tau. _Hog_.

All the characters remain on the stage in spite of this direction.

At first the line ran, "Of this proud _Prince of Orange_, at the worst."

MS. _Enter Pr. of Orange, Gr: Henrie, Gra: William, Collonells & Captaines. Gr: Henrie_ and _Collonells_ are scored through. In the right-hand margin is written the name of an actor, _Mr. Rob:_.
The words "I feele too" probably belong to another speaker.

Fletcher is fond of using "ye" for "you."

In the MS. there is a marginal note:--"I like not this: neither do I think that the pr. was thus disgracefully used, besides he is to much presented. G.B." The initials are those of Sir George Buc, Master of the Revels.

"Shellain" is a corrupted form of Dutch _schelm_--a rogue, villain.

The stage direction in the MS. runs thus:--"_Enter 1 Burger, Vandermitten, Grotius." Vandermitten_ finally takes the place of 1 _Burger_ and _Grotius_.

Beneath, in the MS., is written the name of the actor who took the part, "Mr. Gough."

In the right-hand margin are written the initials "R.T." It is unknown what actor was the owner of them.

"Jo: Ri:" is written above, and "migh" in the right-hand margin.

"Mr. Rob." took the Captain's part.

This Captain is identical with the one in the previous scene: "Jo: Rice:" took the part.

In the MS. _Vandermitten_ is scored through, and _Grotius_ written above; but the alteration is not followed afterwards.

"R.T." was responsible for the part.

In the right-hand margin are the initials "T.P.," i.e. Thomas Pollard.

In the right hand margin is a stage-direction, scored through,--"Droms--Enter ye Arminians: pass over."

MS. _Enter Bredero, Vandort_ and 2 Lords. The words in Roman letters are scored through in the MS.

The brackets are mine: whoever excluded the 2 _Lords_ left these words standing by an oversight.

These weak endings without a pause are characteristic of Massinger.

Massinger is fond of the use of parentheses.

In the MS. _Leiden_ has been corrected into _Roterdam_.

The officer was personated by "R.T."

In the right-hand margin we find "Mr. Rice."

The Captains' parts were taken by "Mr. Rob." and "Mighel."
The Dutch word _knol_ signifies both a turnip and a blockhead.

i.e. explain to me. (A very common expression.)

"Fry" has here the unusual sense of "buzz, hiss."

In the right-hand margin we find "Cap. Jo: R."

Underneath is written Migh. who took the part of 1 _Huntsman_.

"And bycause some Hares by haunting the lowe watrie places do become foule and mesled, such Hares doe never follow the hard ways nor make such pathes to their formes, but use all their subtleties and pollecies by the sides of the Ryvers, brookes and other waters."


"R.T." took the part.

MS. they.

"Tho: Po:" (i.e. Thomas Pollard) is written in the right-hand margin.

MS. Potents.

The part was taken by "G. Lowen."

The Wife's part was taken by "Nich", who may possibly be (as Mr. Fleay suggests) Nicholas Tooley; but I suspect that a younger actor than Tooley would have been chosen for the part.

"Jo: Rice" took the part.

A corruption of Dutch _kermis_ (the annual fair).

An ironical expression (very common) of denial or astonishment.

_Sc_. merrily (Dutch _lustig_), "Lustick, as the Dutchman says."

--_All's Well_, II. 3.

A corruption of Dutch _brui_. The meaning is "A plague on his Excellenciel!"

In the MS. follow two and a half lines, spoken by _Vandort_, and a speech of _Barnavelt's_, twenty-four lines long. These were cancelled on revision. I have succeeded in reading some of the lines; and perhaps after a keener scrutiny the whole passage might become legible. But I have no doubt that the lines were cancelled by the author himself (Massinger?) in order to shorten the scene.

Nearly forty lines of dialogue that follow are cancelled in the MS., in order to shorten the scene.

Not marked in MS.

This passage is marked in pencil, as for omission, in the MS.

The words "Upon my soule" are crossed through in the MS.
This line and the eleven lines following are marked for omission in the MS.

The words "tooke that course That now is practisd on you" are crossed through in the MS., and "cutt of his opposites" substituted in the right-hand margin.

In the MS. the words "you can apply this" are crossed through.

The words "to a Monarchie" are corrected in the MS. "to another forme."

Not marked in MS.

Not marked in MS.

T[homas] Holc[ombe] took the part.

"Mr. Rob." took the part.

In the right-hand margin we find the actor's name, "Mr. Bir.," i.e. Bir[ch].

"The quantity of ten of any commodity; as a _dicker_ of hides was ten hides, a _dicker_ of iron ten bars. See 'Fragment. Antiq.,' p. 192. Probably from _decas_, Lat."--Nares.

Sc. pumpkin (Fr.).

"Dewse-ace. _Deux et az_." Cotgrave. (Cf. _Love's Labour's Lost_, I. 2.) The lowest cast of the dice, two aces, was called "ames ace."

Among the Romans the highest cast was called _Venus_ and the lowest _canis_. (Cf. a well-known couplet of Propertius, lib. iv. el. viii. l. 45--

"Me quoque per talos Venerem quaeerente secundos
Semper damnosi subsiluere canes.")

Sc. quatre et trois.

Embroidered, figured.

The actors' names, "Mr. Rob." and "Mr. Rice," are written in the right-hand margin.

A term of contempt, like "poor John."

To set up one's rest, meant, as has been abundantly shown by Shakespearean commentators, to stand upon one's cards at _primero_; but the word "pull" in this connexion is not at all easy to explain. The general sense of the present passage is plain: "Is my life held in such paltry esteem that slaves are allowed to gamble for it as for a stake at cards?" We have nowhere a plain account of _primero_. When the "Compleat Gamester" was published (in 1674) the game had been discontinued. The variety of quotations given by Nares, under _Primero_ and _Rest_, is simply distracting. There are two passages (apud Nares) of Fletcher's bearing on the present difficulty:--
"My _rest is up_, wench, and I _pull_ for that
Will make me ever famous." _Woman's Prize_, I. 2.

"Faith, sir, my _rest is up_,
And what I now _pull_ shall no more afflict me
Than if I play'd at span-counter." _Monsieur Thomas_, IV. 9.

Dyce accepts Nares' suggestion that _pull_ means to _draw a card_; but
if a player is standing on his cards, why should he want to draw a card?
There is an old expression, to "pull down a side," i.e. to ruin one's partner (by bad play); and I am inclined to think that to "pull at a rest" in _primero_ meant to try to pull down (beat, go beyond) the player who was standing on his cards. The first player might say, "My rest is up"; the other players might either discard or say, "See it"; then the first player would either "revie" it (cover with a larger sum) or throw up his cards. At length—for some limitation would have been agreed upon—the challenger would play his cards, and the opponents would "pull at his rest"—try to break down his hand. I am not at all sure that this is the proper explanation; but _pull_ in the text cannot possibly mean _draw a card_.

[213] The body of Leydenberg was not exposed until two days after Barneveld's execution.

[214] Charles I. was particularly anxious that these trained bands should be made as efficient as possible, In the "Analytical Index to the Series of Records known as the Remembrancia" (printed for the Corporation of the City of London, 1878) there are several letters from the Lords of the Council to the Lord Mayor on this subject (pp. 533-9). The Directions sent round to the Lord Lieutenants (An. 1638) concerning the Trained Bands of the several counties are given in Rushworth's _Historical Collections_, Part 2, vol. i. p. 790.

[215] An allusion, of course, to Bardolph's famous definition of "accommodated" (2 _Henry IV_, iii. 2).

[216] _Fox_ was a cant term for a sword of English make. At Houndslow Heath there was a sword-blade manufactory:—"Nov 30 (1639). Benjamin Stone, blade maker, Hounslow Heath, to the Officers of the Ordnance. Will always be ready to deliver 1,000 swords of all fashions every month throughout the year, and will put in such security as the office shall desire. Has now ready at the Tower and in his own house 2,000 swords to deliver when the officers shall please."—Calendar of State Papers, Domestic Series, 1639-40, p. 134.

[217] _Ticktacks_ was a game somewhat similar to backgammon. It is described in the _Compleat Gamester_, 1674.

[218] The Pacification of Berwick took place in June, 1639.

[219] Tobacco-pipefuls; but no doubt a pun was intended. For _Bermudas_ tobacco Nares quotes from _Clitus's Whimz_, p. 135, "Where being furnished with tinder, match, and a portion of decayed _Bermoodus_ they smoked it most terribly."

[220] Our forefathers esteemed the March brewing; we the October.

[221] To "build a sconce" means, I suppose, to fix a candle in a
candle-stick.

[222] This speech of Sir Richard's is very much in Shirley's style: cf. _Lady of Pleasure_ (I. 1).

[223] Galley-foist was the name given to long many-oared barges, particularly the Lord Mayor's barge of state. Foist is also a term for a sharper; and gullifoist was intended to be pronounced here gullifoist.

[224] An account of the way to play _Gleek_ is given in the _Compleat Gamester_, 1674.

[225] Ambergrease was not uncommonly used for culinary purposes.

[226] Father-in-law is often used by old writers for step-father. Perhaps "by a" is a correction for "to a."

[227] Title, mark of distinction (Hamlet, I. 4, &c.).


[229] To be "in the suds" was an expression for to be "in the dumps."

[230] Vid. Notes of the Commentators on _Henry V_., iii. 7 ("strait trossers").

[231] Regals were a kind of small portable organ: vide Nares.

[232] Cf. a passage in Shirley's _Witty Fair One_ (IV. 2): "What makes so many scholars then come from Oxford or Cambridge like market-women with dorsers full of lamentable tragedies and ridiculous comedies which they might here vent to the players, but they will take no money for them?"

[233] The Theorbo was a kind of lute.

[234] On June 20, 1632, a royal proclamation was made "commanding the Gentry to keep their Residence in at their Mansions in the Country, and forbidding them to make their habitations in London and places adjoining." The text of the proclamation is in Rushworth's Historical Collections (1680), Pt. II. vol. i. p. 144. In a very interesting little volume of unpublished poems, temp. Charles I. (MS. 15,228, British Museum), there is an "Oade by occasion of his Maiesties Proclamatyon for Gentlemen to goe into the Country." It is too long to quote here in full, but I will give a few stanzas:--

Nor lett the Gentry grudge to goe
Into the places where they grew,
Butt thinke them blest they may doe so:
    Who would pursue

    The smoaky gloryes of the Towne,
That might goe till his Native Earth
And by the shineing fyre sitt downe
    Of his own hearth;

Free from the gripeing Scriv'ners bands
And the more biteing Mercers bookes,
Free from the bayte of oyled hands
   And painted lookes?

The Country, too, eene chops for rayne:
You that exhale it by your pow'r,
Let the fatt drops fall downe again
   In a full show'r.

And you, bright beautyes of the time,
That spend your selves here in a blaze,
Fixe to your Orbe and proper Clime
   Your wandering Rayes.

Lett no dark corner of the Land
Bee unimbellisht with one Gemme,
And those which here too thick doe stand
   Sprinkle on them.

And, trust mee, Ladies, you will find
In that sweet life more solid joys,
More true contentment to the minde,
   Then all Towne-Toyes.

Nor Cupid there less blood doth spill,
Butt heads his shafts with chaster love,
Not feath'red with a Sparrow's quill
   Butt of a Dove.

There may you heare the Nightingale,
The harmeless Syren of the wood,
How prettily shee tells a tale
   Of rape and blood.

Plant trees you may and see them shoot
Up with your Children, to bee serv'd
To your cleane Board, and the fayr'st fruite
   To bee preserved;

And learne to use their sev'rall gumms.
Tis innocente in the sweet blood
Of Cherrys, Apricocks and Plumms
   To bee imbru'd.


[236] Sc. good-bye. Cf. Shirley's _Constant Maid_, i. 1, "Buoy, _Close_, buoy, honest _Close_: we are blanks, blanks."

[237] Can the reference be to _Troilus and Cressida_?

[238] Ben Jonson's _Alchemist_.

[239] Puisne (i.e. puny) was the term applied to students at the Inns of Court; also to Freshmen at Oxford.

[240] Cf. Shirley's _Honoria and Mammon_, i. 2:

   "Go to your Lindabrides
I'the new brothel; she's a handsome _leveret._

[241] The first edition of this well-known book was published in 1628. _Parsons Resolutions_ is a fictitious book.

[242] The "lamentable ballad of the Lady's Fall" has been reprinted by Ritson and Percy.

[243] In the MS. follows a line, scored through:--

"And while my footman plaies sigh out my part."

[244] Shirley delights in ridiculing the affectation in which the gallants of his time indulged. Cf. a very similar passage in _The Lady of Pleasure_, v. 1.

[245] The cant language of thieves. In Harman's _Caveat for Cursitors_, or some of Dekker's tracts, "Pedlars' French" may be found in abundance.

[246] I print this passage exactly as I find it in the MS. With a little trouble it might be turned into good law.

[247] _Aut Shirley aut Diabolus_. Cf. _Duke's Mistress_, iv. 1:

"You shall lead destiny in cords of silk,
   And it shall follow tame and to your pleasure."

[248] Sc. swaggering.

[249] A Chrisome child was one that died within a month after birth, at the time of wearing the Chrisome cloth (i.e. the cloth formerly wrapt round a child after baptism). Device implies that his rival is perfectly helpless among ladies, a mere child.

[250] "In the City of London," says Nares, "young freemen who march at the head of their proper companies on the lord mayor's day, sometimes with flags, were called _whifflers_ or _bachelor whifflers_, not because they cleared the way but because they went first as whifflers did.---"I look'd the next Lord Mayor's day to see you o' the livery, or one of the _bachelor_ whifflers. _City Match_."

[251] These words are scored through in the MS.

[252] To "bear a brain" means to have understanding. The expression is very common.

[253] Not marked in the MS.

[254] The earliest reference I have yet found to the "Cup at _Newmarket_" is in Shirley's _Hyde Park_, v. 1.

[255] The exact date of his death is unknown; he was dead before the performance of Ben Jonson's _Bartholomew Fair_ (1614).

[256] "Merlin. The _falco aesalon_ of Linnaeus, a small species of hawk; sometimes corrupted into murleon. It was chiefly used to fly at small birds, and Latham says it was particularly appropriated to the service of ladies."--Nares.
[257] Thomas Heywood gives an account of the "great ship" in his "True description of his Majesties Royall Ship built this yeare 1637 at Wool-witch in Kent," &c. 1637. 4to.

[258] "Back side" = back yard.

[259] A wild cat.

[260] This scene was added, as an afterthought, at the end of the MS. In the body of the MS. we find only "_A song ith taverne. Enter Thomas._"

[261] The stage direction is my own.

[262] All that I know at present of Mr. Adson is that he published in 1621 a collection of "Courtly Masquing Ayres."

[263] A corruption of "_save-reverence_: we usually find the form "sir-reverence."

[264] i.e. drunk.

[265] An allusion to Webster's "_Vittoria Coromborea, or the White Devil_."

[266] Not marked in MS. We have, instead, a note:--

  _"And then begin as was intended."_

[267] Old authors constantly allude to the riotous conduct of the 'prentices on Shrove Tuesday.

[268] This is a correction (in the MS.) for "to a Beggars tune."

[269] So in Dekker & Middleton's _First Part of the Honest Whore_ (IV. 3):--

  "_A sister's thread_ i' faith had been enough."

Dyce was no doubt right in thinking that the expression is a corruption of _sewster's_ thread. In Ford's _Lady's Trial_, Gifford altered "sister's thread" to "_silver_ thread." Shirley has "sister's thread" in _Hyde Park_ (V. 1).

[270] With this abuse cf. a very similar passage in Shirley's _Duke's Mistress_ (IV. 1).


[272] "Canaries" was the name of a quick, lively dance. Cf. Middlemen's _Spanish Gipsy_ (IV. 2): "Fortune's a scurvy whore if she makes not my head sound like a rattle and my heels dance the canaries."

[273] Cf. a similar passage in Shirley's _Brothers_ (iii. 1).

[274] In Sidney's _Arcadia_.

[275] Cf. Jonson's _Every Man out of his Humour_, II. 1: "They say there's a new motion of the city of _Niniveh_ with _Jonas_ and the whale to be seen at _Fleet bridge_." (A _motion_, of course, is a puppet-show.)
... "A bird to be made much on. She and the horse
_That snorts at Spain by an instinct of nature_
Should have shown tricks together."

[277] An allusion to the game of "barley-break."

[278] In the MS. the speaker's name is omitted. I have chosen
_Courtwell_ at a venture.

[279] _Holland's Leaguer_ was the name of a notorious brothel in Southwark.

[280] _The Tell-Tale_. Through the courtesy of the Master, Dr. Carver, I have had an opportunity of examining this play. It is of no particular interest. The comic part is very poor, suggesting William Rowley at his worst. Here are some fair lines, the best I can find:--

_Fide[lio]_. How? dead in prison?

_Duke_. Dead, _Fidelio_:
Things of theire nature, like [a] vipers brood,
Kill their owne parents. But having sett the Court
In some good order, my next busines
Ys thus disguis'd to overlooke the Camp;
For a rude army, like a plott of ground
Left to yt selfe, growes to a wildernes
Peopled with wolves & tigers, should not the prince
Like to a carefull gardner see yt fenct,
Waterd & weeded with industrious care,
That hee ithe time of pruning nether spare
Weeds for faire looks and painted bravery, nor
Cut dowe good hearbs and serviceable for
Theire humble growth: the violet that is borne
Under a hedg outsmells the blossomd thorne
That dwells fare higher.

_Fide_. Yare full of goodnes & have layd out much
In provision for the whole state.

_Duke_. My place: I am overseer
And bound to seet provided for by pattent.
For as the sunn, when lesser plannets sleep,
Holds his continued progresse on and keepes
A watchful eye over the world, so kings
(When meaner subjects have their revillings
And sports about them) move in a restless herde;
The publique safty is theyr privat care.
But now farewell; the army once surveighd
Expect mee here.

_Fid_. Your pleasure bee obaid.

[281] A few years ago I suggested in "Notes and Queries" that this unknown author was Cyril Tourneur. Afterwards I discovered that I had been anticipated by Thomas Lovell Beddoes. Curiously enough Mr. Fleay
had independently arrived at the same conclusion. Mr. Swinburne (_Essay on Chapman_) is inclined to attribute the _Second Maiden's Tragedy_ to Middleton.

[282] The next scene is marked _Act 2, Scene 1_.


*** END OF THIS PROJECT GUTENBERG EBOOK OLD ENGLISH PLAYS, V2 ***

***** This file should be named 10656.txt or 10656.zip *****
This and all associated files of various formats will be found in:
   http://www.gutenberg.net/1/0/6/5/10656/

Produced by Jonathan Ingram, Tapio Riikonen and PG Distributed Proofreaders

Updated editions will replace the previous one--the old editions will be renamed.

Creating the works from public domain print editions means that no one owns a United States copyright in these works, so the Foundation (and you!) can copy and distribute it in the United States without permission and without paying copyright royalties. Special rules, set forth in the General Terms of Use part of this license, apply to copying and distributing Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works to protect the PROJECT GUTENBERG-tm concept and trademark. Project Gutenberg is a registered trademark, and may not be used if you charge for the eBooks, unless you receive specific permission. If you do not charge anything for copies of this eBook, complying with the rules is very easy. You may use this eBook for nearly any purpose such as creation of derivative works, reports, performances and research. They may be modified and printed and given away--you may do practically ANYTHING with public domain eBooks. Redistribution is subject to the trademark license, especially commercial redistribution.

*** START: FULL LICENSE ***

THE FULL PROJECT GUTENBERG LICENSE
PLEASE READ THIS BEFORE YOU DISTRIBUTE OR USE THIS WORK

To protect the Project Gutenberg-tm mission of promoting the free distribution of electronic works, by using or distributing this work (or any other work associated in any way with the phrase "Project Gutenberg"), you agree to comply with all the terms of the Full Project Gutenberg-tm License (available with this file or online at
Section 1. General Terms of Use and Redistributing Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works

1.A. By reading or using any part of this Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work, you indicate that you have read, understand, agree to and accept all the terms of this license and intellectual property (trademark/copyright) agreement. If you do not agree to abide by all the terms of this agreement, you must cease using and return or destroy all copies of Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works in your possession. If you paid a fee for obtaining a copy of or access to a Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work and you do not agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement, you may obtain a refund from the person or entity to whom you paid the fee as set forth in paragraph 1.E.8.

1.B. "Project Gutenberg" is a registered trademark. It may only be used on or associated in any way with an electronic work by people who agree to be bound by the terms of this agreement. There are a few things that you can do with most Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works even without complying with the full terms of this agreement. See paragraph 1.C below. There are a lot of things you can do with Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works if you follow the terms of this agreement and help preserve free future access to Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works. See paragraph 1.E below.

1.C. The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation ("the Foundation" or PGLAF), owns a compilation copyright in the collection of Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works. Nearly all the individual works in the collection are in the public domain in the United States. If an individual work is in the public domain in the United States and you are located in the United States, we do not claim a right to prevent you from copying, distributing, performing, displaying or creating derivative works based on the work as long as all references to Project Gutenberg are removed. Of course, we hope that you will support the Project Gutenberg-tm mission of promoting free access to electronic works by freely sharing Project Gutenberg-tm works in compliance with the terms of this agreement for keeping the Project Gutenberg-tm name associated with the work. You can easily comply with the terms of this agreement by keeping this work in the same format with its attached full Project Gutenberg-tm License when you share it without charge with others.

1.D. The copyright laws of the place where you are located also govern what you can do with this work. Copyright laws in most countries are in a constant state of change. If you are outside the United States, check the laws of your country in addition to the terms of this agreement before downloading, copying, displaying, performing, distributing or creating derivative works based on this work or any other Project Gutenberg-tm work. The Foundation makes no representations concerning the copyright status of any work in any country outside the United States.

1.E. Unless you have removed all references to Project Gutenberg:

1.E.1. The following sentence, with active links to, or other immediate access to, the full Project Gutenberg-tm License must appear prominently whenever any copy of a Project Gutenberg-tm work (any work on which the phrase "Project Gutenberg" appears, or with which the phrase "Project
Gutenberg is associated) is accessed, displayed, performed, viewed, copied or distributed:

This eBook is for the use of anyone anywhere at no cost and with almost no restrictions whatsoever. You may copy it, give it away or re-use it under the terms of the Project Gutenberg License included with this eBook or online at www.gutenberg.net

1.E.2. If an individual Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work is derived from the public domain (does not contain a notice indicating that it is posted with permission of the copyright holder), the work can be copied and distributed to anyone in the United States without paying any fees or charges. If you are redistributing or providing access to a work with the phrase "Project Gutenberg" associated with or appearing on the work, you must comply either with the requirements of paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 or obtain permission for the use of the work and the Project Gutenberg-tm trademark as set forth in paragraphs 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.3. If an individual Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work is posted with the permission of the copyright holder, your use and distribution must comply with both paragraphs 1.E.1 through 1.E.7 and any additional terms imposed by the copyright holder. Additional terms will be linked to the Project Gutenberg-tm License for all works posted with the permission of the copyright holder found at the beginning of this work.

1.E.4. Do not unlink or detach or remove the full Project Gutenberg-tm License terms from this work, or any files containing a part of this work or any other work associated with Project Gutenberg-tm.

1.E.5. Do not copy, display, perform, distribute or redistribute this electronic work, or any part of this electronic work, without prominently displaying the sentence set forth in paragraph 1.E.1 with active links or immediate access to the full terms of the Project Gutenberg-tm License.

1.E.6. You may convert to and distribute this work in any binary, compressed, marked up, nonproprietary or proprietary form, including any word processing or hypertext form. However, if you provide access to or distribute copies of a Project Gutenberg-tm work in a format other than "Plain Vanilla ASCII" or other format used in the official version posted on the official Project Gutenberg-tm web site (www.gutenberg.net), you must, at no additional cost, fee or expense to the user, provide a copy, a means of exporting a copy, or a means of obtaining a copy upon request, of the work in its original "Plain Vanilla ASCII" or other form. Any alternate format must include the full Project Gutenberg-tm License as specified in paragraph 1.E.1.

1.E.7. Do not charge a fee for access to, viewing, displaying, performing, copying or distributing any Project Gutenberg-tm works unless you comply with paragraph 1.E.8 or 1.E.9.

1.E.8. You may charge a reasonable fee for copies of or providing access to or distributing Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works provided that

- You pay a royalty fee of 20% of the gross profits you derive from the use of Project Gutenberg-tm works calculated using the method you already use to calculate your applicable taxes. The fee is
owed to the owner of the Project Gutenberg-tm trademark, but he has agreed to donate royalties under this paragraph to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation. Royalty payments must be paid within 60 days following each date on which you prepare (or are legally required to prepare) your periodic tax returns. Royalty payments should be clearly marked as such and sent to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation at the address specified in Section 4, "Information about donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation."

- You provide a full refund of any money paid by a user who notifies you in writing (or by e-mail) within 30 days of receipt that s/he does not agree to the terms of the full Project Gutenberg-tm License. You must require such a user to return or destroy all copies of the works possessed in a physical medium and discontinue all use of and all access to other copies of Project Gutenberg-tm works.

- You provide, in accordance with paragraph 1.F.3, a full refund of any money paid for a work or a replacement copy, if a defect in the electronic work is discovered and reported to you within 90 days of receipt of the work.

- You comply with all other terms of this agreement for free distribution of Project Gutenberg-tm works.

1.E.9. If you wish to charge a fee or distribute a Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work or group of works on different terms than are set forth in this agreement, you must obtain permission in writing from both the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and Michael Hart, the owner of the Project Gutenberg-tm trademark. Contact the Foundation as set forth in Section 3 below.

1.F.

1.F.1. Project Gutenberg volunteers and employees expend considerable effort to identify, do copyright research on, transcribe and proofread public domain works in creating the Project Gutenberg-tm collection. Despite these efforts, Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works, and the medium on which they may be stored, may contain "Defects," such as, but not limited to, incomplete, inaccurate or corrupt data, transcription errors, a copyright or other intellectual property infringement, a defective or damaged disk or other medium, a computer virus, or computer codes that damage or cannot be read by your equipment.

1.F.2. LIMITED WARRANTY, DISCLAIMER OF DAMAGES - Except for the "Right of Replacement or Refund" described in paragraph 1.F.3, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, the owner of the Project Gutenberg-tm trademark, and any other party distributing a Project Gutenberg-tm electronic work under this agreement, disclaim all liability to you for damages, costs and expenses, including legal fees. YOU AGREE THAT YOU HAVE NO REMEDIES FOR NEGLIGENCE, STRICT LIABILITY, BREACH OF WARRANTY OR BREACH OF CONTRACT EXCEPT THOSE PROVIDED IN PARAGRAPH F3. YOU AGREE THAT THE FOUNDATION, THE TRADEMARK OWNER, AND ANY DISTRIBUTOR UNDER THIS AGREEMENT WILL NOT BE LIABLE TO YOU FOR ACTUAL, DIRECT, INDIRECT, CONSEQUENTIAL, PUNITIVE OR INCIDENTAL DAMAGES EVEN IF YOU GIVE NOTICE OF THE POSSIBILITY OF SUCH
1.F.3. LIMITED RIGHT OF REPLACEMENT OR REFUND - If you discover a defect in this electronic work within 90 days of receiving it, you can receive a refund of the money (if any) you paid for it by sending a written explanation to the person you received the work from. If you received the work on a physical medium, you must return the medium with your written explanation. The person or entity that provided you with the defective work may elect to provide a replacement copy in lieu of a refund. If you received the work electronically, the person or entity providing it to you may choose to give you a second opportunity to receive the work electronically in lieu of a refund. If the second copy is also defective, you may demand a refund in writing without further opportunities to fix the problem.

1.F.4. Except for the limited right of replacement or refund set forth in paragraph 1.F.3, this work is provided to you 'AS-IS,' WITH NO OTHER WARRANTIES OF ANY KIND, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTABILITY OR FITNESS FOR ANY PURPOSE.

1.F.5. Some states do not allow disclaimers of certain implied warranties or the exclusion or limitation of certain types of damages. If any disclaimer or limitation set forth in this agreement violates the law of the state applicable to this agreement, the agreement shall be interpreted to make the maximum disclaimer or limitation permitted by the applicable state law. The invalidity or unenforceability of any provision of this agreement shall not void the remaining provisions.

1.F.6. INDEMNITY - You agree to indemnify and hold the Foundation, the trademark owner, any agent or employee of the Foundation, anyone providing copies of Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works in accordance with this agreement, and any volunteers associated with the production, promotion and distribution of Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works, harmless from all liability, costs and expenses, including legal fees, that arise directly or indirectly from any of the following which you do or cause to occur: (a) distribution of this or any Project Gutenberg-tm work, (b) alteration, modification, or additions or deletions to any Project Gutenberg-tm work, and (c) any Defect you cause.

Section 2. Information about the Mission of Project Gutenberg-tm

Project Gutenberg-tm is synonymous with the free distribution of electronic works in formats readable by the widest variety of computers including obsolete, old, middle-aged and new computers. It exists because of the efforts of hundreds of volunteers and donations from people in all walks of life.

Volunteers and financial support to provide volunteers with the assistance they need, is critical to reaching Project Gutenberg-tm's goals and ensuring that the Project Gutenberg-tm collection will remain freely available for generations to come. In 2001, the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation was created to provide a secure and permanent future for Project Gutenberg-tm and future generations. To learn more about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation and how your efforts and donations can help, see Sections 3 and 4 and the Foundation web page at http://www.pglaf.org.
Section 3. Information about the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

The Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation is a non profit 501(c)(3) educational corporation organized under the laws of the state of Mississippi and granted tax exempt status by the Internal Revenue Service. The Foundation's EIN or federal tax identification number is 64-6221541. Its 501(c)(3) letter is posted at http://pglaf.org/fundraising. Contributions to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation are tax deductible to the full extent permitted by U.S. federal laws and your state's laws.

The Foundation's principal office is located at 4557 Melan Dr. S. Fairbanks, AK, 99712., but its volunteers and employees are scattered throughout numerous locations. Its business office is located at 809 North 1500 West, Salt Lake City, UT 84116, (801) 596-1887, email business@pglaf.org. Email contact links and up to date contact information can be found at the Foundation's web site and official page at http://pglaf.org

For additional contact information:
Dr. Gregory B. Newby
Chief Executive and Director
gbnewby@pglaf.org

Section 4. Information about Donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation

Project Gutenberg-tm depends upon and cannot survive without wide spread public support and donations to carry out its mission of increasing the number of public domain and licensed works that can be freely distributed in machine readable form accessible by the widest array of equipment including outdated equipment. Many small donations ($1 to $5,000) are particularly important to maintaining tax exempt status with the IRS.

The Foundation is committed to complying with the laws regulating charities and charitable donations in all 50 states of the United States. Compliance requirements are not uniform and it takes a considerable effort, much paperwork and many fees to meet and keep up with these requirements. We do not solicit donations in locations where we have not received written confirmation of compliance. To SEND DONATIONS or determine the status of compliance for any particular state visit http://pglaf.org

While we cannot and do not solicit contributions from states where we have not met the solicitation requirements, we know of no prohibition against accepting unsolicited donations from donors in such states who approach us with offers to donate.

International donations are gratefully accepted, but we cannot make any statements concerning tax treatment of donations received from outside the United States. U.S. laws alone swamp our small staff.

Please check the Project Gutenberg Web pages for current donation methods and addresses. Donations are accepted in a number of other ways including including checks, online payments and credit card donations. To donate, please visit: http://pglaf.org/donate
Section 5. General Information About Project Gutenberg-tm electronic works.

Professor Michael S. Hart is the originator of the Project Gutenberg-tm concept of a library of electronic works that could be freely shared with anyone. For thirty years, he produced and distributed Project Gutenberg-tm eBooks with only a loose network of volunteer support.

Project Gutenberg-tm eBooks are often created from several printed editions, all of which are confirmed as Public Domain in the U.S. unless a copyright notice is included. Thus, we do not necessarily keep eBooks in compliance with any particular paper edition.

Each eBook is in a subdirectory of the same number as the eBook's eBook number, often in several formats including plain vanilla ASCII, compressed (zipped), HTML and others.

Corrected EDITIONS of our eBooks replace the old file and take over the old filename and etext number. The replaced older file is renamed. VERSIONS based on separate sources are treated as new eBooks receiving new filenames and etext numbers.

Most people start at our Web site which has the main PG search facility:

   http://www.gutenberg.net

This Web site includes information about Project Gutenberg-tm, including how to make donations to the Project Gutenberg Literary Archive Foundation, how to help produce our new eBooks, and how to subscribe to our email newsletter to hear about new eBooks.

EBooks posted prior to November 2003, with eBook numbers BELOW #10000, are filed in directories based on their release date. If you want to download any of these eBooks directly, rather than using the regular search system you may utilize the following addresses and just download by the etext year.

   http://www.gutenberg.net/etext06
   (Or /etext 05, 04, 03, 02, 01, 00, 99, 98, 97, 96, 95, 94, 93, 92, 92, 91 or 90)

EBooks posted since November 2003, with etext numbers OVER #10000, are filed in a different way. The year of a release date is no longer part of the directory path. The path is based on the etext number (which is identical to the filename). The path to the file is made up of single digits corresponding to all but the last digit in the filename. For example an eBook of filename 10234 would be found at:

   http://www.gutenberg.net/1/0/2/3/10234

or filename 24689 would be found at:
   http://www.gutenberg.net/2/4/6/8/24689

An alternative method of locating eBooks:
   http://www.gutenberg.net/GUTINDEX.ALL